



THE BOOK OF
Ephesians
THE GLORIOUS CHURCH
THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER
WALKING OUT NEW TESTAMENT REALITIES

BILLYE BRIM BIBLE INSTITUTE
Encountering Bible Prophecy from the Witness of Dr. Billye Brim.

Copyright ©2022 A Glorious Church Fellowship, Inc.

Billye Brim Ministries • P.O. Box 40 • Branson, MO 65615

(417) 336-4877

All Scripture passages, except as indicated, are taken from the King James Version of the Bible. KJV. Public Domain.

AMPC. Scripture quotations taken from the Amplified® Bible (AMPC), Copyright © 1954, 1958, 1962, 1964, 1965, 1987 by The Lockman Foundation. Used by permission. www.Lockman.org

ASV. Scripture passages marked ASV are taken from the American Standard Version (1901). Public Domain.

ESV. Scripture quotations are from the ESV® Bible (The Holy Bible, English Standard Version®), copyright © 2001 by Crossway, a publishing ministry of Good News Publishers. Used by permission. All rights reserved.

JPS 1917. Scripture passages marked JPS 1917 are taken from The Holy Scriptures, Tanakh 1917 Edition. Published by the Jewish Publication Society. Public Domain.

NASB1995. Scripture quotations marked NASB1995 are taken from the (NASB®) New American Standard Bible® (NASB), Copyright © 1960, 1962, 1963, 1968, 1971, 1972, 1973, 1975, 1977, 1995 by The Lockman Foundation. Used by permission. www.Lockman.org

NLT. Scripture quotations marked (NLT) are taken from the Holy Bible, New Living Translation, copyright © 1996, 2004, 2007 by Tyndale House Foundation. Used by permission of Tyndale House Publishers, Inc., Carol Stream, Illinois 60188. All rights reserved.

TKT. The Jerusalem Bible Edition of The Koren Tanakh. All Scriptures marked “TKT” are quoted with permission from **Koren Publishers Jerusalem Ltd.** www.korenpub.com

Wuest. Scripture quotations marked (Wuest) are taken from The New Testament: An Expanded Translation by Kenneth S. Wuest. Copyright © 1961 by Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co. All rights reserved.

YLT. Young’s Literal Translation. Public Domain.

The Book of Ephesians

Glory. Authority. Unity. Mystery. These themes permeate Paul's Letter to the Ephesians. In the first three chapters, Paul details key principles concerning the believer's redemption and resulting position and responsibility in the heavenlies. Chapters four through six speak of how we are to walk out in our lives the reality of who we are in Christ.

In Christ, as those who have redeemed by His blood, we experience reconciliation that breaks the bonds of disunity. All who accept Him as Savior are brought together in unity. And we are reconciled with God himself.

One of the main practical themes in the Book of Ephesians is the authority of the believer. It is this theme that makes Ephesians so relevant today. Without understanding the authority which has been given to us as believers in Jesus, it is difficult or even impossible to accomplish God's purpose for our lives, especially in the end of days.

As the Lord is restoring His glory to His people, it is absolutely necessary for us to understand how to walk in authority over the enemy as he attempts to stop God's plan.

This manual is designed to be used with the Video Sessions. You will notice that some Video Sessions will cover an entire Lesson, some will cover part of a Lesson, and some Video Sessions will span more than one Lesson. The beginning and end of each Video Session are clearly marked in this manual.

In addition to notes to be used with each Video Session, this manual includes a **Supplement** section with materials referred to in the sessions, including an assortment of maps, articles, and other material for further study. The **Bibliography** documents sources cited in this course.

preface

The Book of Ephesians

The Glorious Church & The Authority of the Believer

Session 1	1
Introduction.....	1
L1 Eph. 1:1-14 Chosen in Him (continued in Session 2)	5
Session 2	9
L1 Eph. 1:1-14 Chosen in Him (continued from Session 1 and into Session 3)	9
Session 3	19
L1 Eph. 1:1-14 Chosen in Him (continued from Session 2)	19
L2 Eph. 1:15-19 The Glory	25
Session 4	29
The Blood and the Glory.....	29
Session 5	43
L3 Eph. 1:19-2:10 Ministry in the Heavens (continued in Session 6)	43
Session 6	47
L3 Eph. 1:19-2:10 Ministry in the Heavens (continued from Session 5)	47
Session 7	55
Walking Out New Testament Realities—Part 1.....	55
Session 8	63
Walking Out New Testament Realities—Part 2	63
Session 9	73
L4 Eph. 2:5-6 How To Use the Authority of the Believer.....	73
Session 10	81
L4A The Panoply: Maintaining Position	81

contents

Session 11	93
Walking Out New Testament Realities—Part 3	93
Session 12	105
L5 Eph. 2:4–7 Eternity Future Grace and Glory	105
L6 Eph. 2:8–18 New Creation One New Man	109
Session 13	119
L7 Eph. 2:19–3:21 One Body, a Temple	119
Session 14	131
Walking Out New Testament Realities—Part 4	131
Session 15	141
Walking Out New Testament Realities—Part 5	141
Session 16	151
L8 Eph. 2:19–22 God’s Building	151
L9 Eph. 3:1–11 The Purpose of the Ages	155
Session 17	159
L10 Eph. 3:14–21 Filled with God	159
Session 18	167
Psalms, Hymns, and Spiritual Songs	167
Session 19	177
Plans, Purposes, Pursuits	177
181 Supplement List	
vii Bibliography	

Bibliography

- Braxton, Dean. *In Heaven! Experiencing The Throne of God, The Testimony of Dean Braxton*. Maitland, FL: Xulon Press, 2009.
- Brim, Billye. "Dominion." Billye Brim Ministries. March 5, 2021, <https://billyebrim.org/dominion/>
- Brim, Billye. *The Blood and the Glory*. Tulsa: Harrison House, 1995.
- Brown, Francis, S. R. Driver, and Charles A Briggs. *A Hebrew and English Lexicon of the Old Testament*. 1907. Reprint, London: Oxford University Press, 1966.
- Bullinger, E. W. *Appendixes to The Companion Bible*. 1922. Reprint, Grand Rapids: Kregel Publications, 1990.
- Bullinger, E. W. *The Companion Bible*. 1922. Reprint, Grand Rapids: Kregel Publications, 1990.
- Copeland, Kenneth, ed. *John G. Lake: His Life, His Sermons, His Boldness of Faith*. Fort Worth, TX: Kenneth Copeland Publications, 1994.
- F.W. Grant, *The Numerical Bible, Vol. 6, Acts to 2 Corinthians* (Including Ephesians) (New York: Bible Truth Depot, 1897), PAGE. <https://archive.org/details/numericalbiblebe06gran/>
- Hagin, Kenneth E. *Growing Up, Spiritually*. Tulsa: Rhema Bible Church, 1976.
- Hagin, Kenneth E. *Plans, Purposes, and Pursuits*. Tulsa: Rhema Bible Church, 1989.
- Hagin, Kenneth E. *The Believer's Authority*. Tulsa: Rhema Bible Church, 1967, 1986.
- Hagin, Kenneth E. *The Triumphant Church*. Tulsa: Rhema Bible Church, 1993.
- MacMillan, John A. *The Authority of the Believer*. Originally published as a series of articles, 1932. Reprint, Branson: A Glorious Church Fellowship, 2015.
- Mounce, William D., ed. *Mounce's Complete Expository Dictionary of Old & New Testament Words*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 2006.
- Renner, Rick. *Sparkling Gems from the Greek*. Tulsa: Teach All Nations, 2003).
- Tillman, Nola Taylor. "How old is Earth?" Space.com. August 20, 2021. <https://www.space.com/24854-how-old-is-earth.html>.
- Strong, James. *A Concise Dictionary of the Words in the Greek Testament*. Hendersonville, TN: Mendenhall Sales, Inc., n.d.
- Strong, James. *A Concise Dictionary of the Words in the Hebrew Bible*. Hendersonville, TN: Mendenhall Sales, Inc., n.d.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Thayer, Joseph Henry. *Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament*. New York: Harper & Brothers, 1889.

Wigglesworth, Smith. "Righteousness." smithwigglesworth.com.

Accessed February 4, 2022.

<http://www.smithwigglesworth.com/sermons/eif8.htm>

Wigglesworth, Smith. *Only Believe—Experience God's Miracles Every Day*.

Previously published as *Smith Wigglesworth on Power to Serve*.

New Kensington, PA: Whitaker House, 1998.

[RETURN TO CONTENTS](#)

EPHESIANS

INTRODUCTION

SESSION 1 STARTS HERE

The Epistle to the Ephesians is filled with God's purpose for the church (the *ekklēsia*) and for all creation.

Author: The Holy Spirit through Paul.

Written: During Paul's first imprisonment at Rome (A.D. 61–63).
During these two years he wrote the Epistles to the Ephesians, the Philippians, the Colossians, and to Philemon.

For further study, see CB Appendix 7: "Church (Greek *Ekklēsia*) Companion Bible Appendix 186."

It was sent by Tychicus, who also bore the letters to the Colossians and to Philemon.

The Scope:

E. W. Bullinger, *The Companion Bible*

EPHESIANS is the second ... of the great text-books of doctrinal instruction for believers in this Dispensation. In *Romans* is set forth all the truth concerning the standing of the sinner in Christ, as having died and risen with Him. Now we are taken a further stage and taught that the sinner not only died and rose again in Christ, but that he is now in God's sight and purpose seated with Christ in the heavenlies.¹

F. W. Grant, *The Numerical Bible*

The epistle to the Ephesians carries us to the height of Christian position. It is, as we well know, the epistle of the heavenly places. Christ is seated there, and we are seated together in Him.

... We look backward to see God's purpose toward us before the world was. We look forward to see God's grace manifested to the principalities and powers in heavenly places ... [even now] ... and to divine glory manifested in the Church through Christ Jesus throughout the ages. Thus we have the widest scope of view anywhere in the New Testament.²

The Mystery Revealed:

E. W. Bullinger, *The Companion Bible*

Romans ends with a reference to the revelation of the Mystery ... *Ephesians* takes up that subject and unfolds it to us.³

¹ E. W. Bullinger, *The Companion Bible* (1922; repr., Grand Rapids: Kregel Publications, 1990), 1759.

² F.W. Grant, *The Numerical Bible, Vol. 6, Acts to 2 Corinthians* (Including Ephesians) (New York: Bible Truth Depot, 1897), 319. <https://archive.org/details/numericalbiblebe06gran/>

³ E. W. Bullinger, *The Companion Bible* (1922; repr., Grand Rapids: Kregel Publications, 1990), 1759.

F. W. Grant, *The Numerical Bible*

This is the full revelation now of that which had been a mystery hid in God from the ages and generations throughout all the age-times, and Paul himself is the special minister of this to bring men into the fulness of the blessing.⁴

IN HIM

See Dr. Kenneth E. Hagin's minibook *In Him*.

Ephesus: A Brief History

Ephesus was an ancient Greek city built in the tenth century B.C.

It was located in Ionia, on the western coast of modern-day Turkey.

Came under Roman control in 129 B.C.

Famed for Greek goddess Artemis (Roman Diana)

The Temple to Artemis was one of the Seven Wonders of the Ancient World.

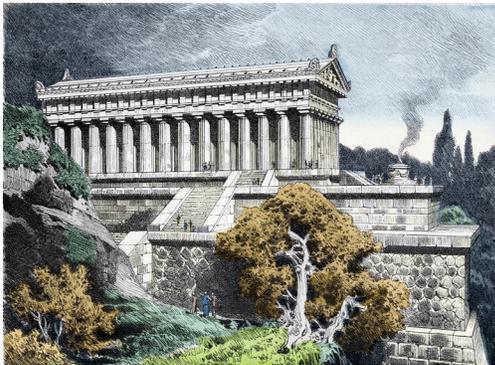


Figure 1: Temple of Diana at Ephesus by Ferdinand Knab. Public Domain.
[https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Temple_of_Diana_at_Ephesus_by_Ferdinand_Knab_\(1886\).png](https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Temple_of_Diana_at_Ephesus_by_Ferdinand_Knab_(1886).png)



Figure 2: Ruins of Temple of Artemis.
Dennis Jarvis from Halifax, Canada, CC BY-SA 2.0
https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Jordan-16A-085_-_Temple_of_Artemis.jpg

Theatre – 25,000-seat capacity, largest in the ancient world.

Harbor: slowly silted up

Earthquake in A.D. 614

John lived there.

He possibly wrote the Gospel of John there.

Paul visited there briefly during his second missionary journey and then lived there two years (A.D. 52–54) during his third journey.

He wrote 1 Corinthians there.



Figure 3: The Theatre at Ephesus.
Image by David Mark from Pixabay.
<https://pixabay.com/photos/ephesus-turkey-greek-theatre-95558/>

⁴ F.W. Grant, *The Numerical Bible, Vol. 6, Acts to 2 Corinthians* (Including Ephesians) (New York: Bible Truth Depot, 1897), 319-320. <https://archive.org/details/numericalbiblebe06gran/>

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Acts 18:19-21 KJV

Acts 18:19 And he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but he himself entered into the synagogue, and reasoned with the Jews.

Acts 18:20 When they desired him to tarry longer time with them, he consented not;

Acts 18:21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must by all means keep this feast that cometh in Jerusalem: but I will return again unto you, if God will. And he sailed from Ephesus.

Acts 19:1-20 KJV

Acts 19:1 And it came to pass, that, while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts came to Ephesus: and finding certain disciples,

Acts 19:2 He said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost.

Acts 19:3 And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto John's baptism.

Acts 19:4 Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.

Acts 19:5 When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

Acts 19:6 And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

Acts 19:7 And all the men were about twelve.

I believe it was during this encounter with Paul that these men from Ephesus were born again. It appears they did not know that Jesus, the One who would come after John the Baptist, had actually come. After accepting Christ as Savior, they were baptized in water and then were baptized in the Holy Spirit.

There are three baptisms:

1. At salvation, the Holy Spirit baptizes you into Christ. (The Holy Spirit comes within you.)
2. At water baptism, a fellow believer baptizes you in water to show symbolically what happened to you when you were born again.
3. At the Baptism in the Holy Spirit, the Lord Jesus baptizes you in the Holy Spirit. (The Holy Spirit comes upon you.)

Acts 19:8 And he went into the synagogue, and spake boldly for the space of three months, disputing and persuading the things concerning the kingdom of God.

Acts 19:9 But when divers were hardened, and believed not, but spake evil of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, disputing daily in the school of one Tyrannus.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Acts 19:10 And this continued by the space of two years; so that all they which dwelt in Asia heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both Jews and Greeks.

“Greeks”

The Greek word Ἕλλην (*Hellén = hel'-lane*) referred, in a limited sense, to native Greeks, but was also used in a broad sense to refer to all non-Jews (Gentiles).

Acts 19:11 And God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul:

Acts 19:12 So that from his body were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them.

The power of God was manifest dramatically in Ephesus, which was known to be a center for evil magical arts. There is a clear message for our generation: It is dangerous to preach about the power and not have any.

Acts 19:13 Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth.

Acts 19:14 And there were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so.

Acts 19:15 And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye?

Acts 19:16 And the man in whom the evil spirit was leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.

Acts 19:17 And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus; and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified.

Acts 19:18 And many that believed came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds.

Acts 19:19 Many of them also which used curious arts brought their books together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver.

Acts 19:20 So mightily grew the word of God and prevailed.

SESSION 1 CONTINUES IN LESSON 1

EPHESIANS

CHAPTER 1:1–14

Chosen in Him

SESSION 1 CONTINUES HERE

Points of Emphasis

- Repetition of phrases such as:
 - “God’s will.”
 - “God’s purpose.”
 - “According to His own counsel.”
- Grace
- End result: To the praise of the glory of His grace
- Glory

Ephesians 1:1–2 KJV

Eph. 1:1 ¶ Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus:

Eph. 1:2 Grace *be* to you, and peace, from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Jesus Christ.

Note: Some of the oldest manuscripts omit Ephesus.

This suggests it could have been a circular like Colossians.

Colossians 4:16 KJV And when this epistle is read among you, cause that it be read also in the church of the Laodiceans; and that ye likewise read the epistle from Laodicea.

Brim Note:

Paul’s letters were precious, dear, scarce in number, handwritten.

Consider this counsel:

2 Timothy 4:13 KJV The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring with thee, and the books, but **especially the parchments.**

Ephesians specifically addresses the letter “to the saints” and “to the faithful” as individuals, and not to the church body. Therefore, it is to all believers now.

The New Testament calls believers “saints.”

Acts 9:13 KJV Then Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he hath done **to thy saints** at Jerusalem. (emphasis added)

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

1 Corinthians 1:2 KJV Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, **called to be saints**, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours. (emphasis added)

“to be”

Note that *“to be”* is in italics. It does not appear in the Greek manuscripts. The Greek words κλητοῖς ἁγίοις states simply that they are “called saints.”

The Wuest New Testament translates Ephesians 1:1, “... to the saints, the ones who are [in Ephesus] namely, believing ones in Christ Jesus.”

Every Spiritual Blessing

Ephesians 1:3 KJV ¶ Blessed *be* the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings [Greek: *every spiritual blessing*] in heavenly *places* in Christ:

Brim Note: The following *Numerical Bible* note helped me to better put into words something which I knew.

F. W. Grant, *The Numerical Bible*

The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ is God perfectly revealed, and it is He who “hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ.”

Notice how we are entitled, therefore, to go back through all the Old Testament scriptures and to claim every spiritual blessing that we find there as our own. We do not take them from those to whom they belonged. Those blessings declare **the character of God** who is now revealed to us and who has blessed us in Christ.

... “all spiritual blessings” then are ours, only that the sphere to which they belong, with which they connect us, is heavenly and not earthly. There is no conflict, therefore, with Israel’s blessings; although surely, their highest blessings must be spiritual also, but they are in earthly places, not in heavenly.

Christ is the storehouse of these blessings for us.

[Isaiah 54:17 KJV] No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper; and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the LORD, and their righteousness is of me, saith the LORD.]

[2 Corinthians 1:20 KJV] For all the promises of God in him *are yea*, and in him Amen, unto the glory of God by us.]

“All spiritual blessings” then are ours. We only need faith to claim them and enjoy them. Unbelief may, alas, make us poor still, **shaming the One whom we should glorify** by the manifestation of the blessing that is ours.⁵

⁵ F.W. Grant, *The Numerical Bible- Vol 6 Acts to 2 Corinthians* (Including Ephesians) (New York: Bible Truth Depot, 1897), 323-324. <https://archive.org/details/numericalbiblebe06gran/>

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

In Deuteronomy 28:1–13, God communicates the blessings that will come on Israel if they obey Him. These were blessings that others could see. In the verses that follow, He describes the curses that will befall them if they disobey Him and fall into idol worship. God wanted Israel to be a showcase of His blessing as they worshiped the one true God.

Deuteronomy 28:9–10 KJV

Deut. 28:9 The Lord shall establish thee an holy people unto himself, as he hath sworn unto thee, if thou shalt keep the commandments of the Lord thy God, and walk in his ways.

Deut. 28:10 And all people of the earth shall see that thou art called by the name of the Lord; and they shall be afraid of thee.

Ezekiel 36:1–2, 8–12, 19–28 KJV

Ezek. 36:1 Also, thou son of man, prophesy unto the mountains of Israel, and say, Ye mountains of Israel, hear the word of the Lord:

Ezek. 36:2 Thus saith the Lord God; Because the enemy hath said against you, Aha, even the ancient high places are ours in possession:

Ezek. 36:8 But ye, O mountains of Israel, ye shall shoot forth your branches, and yield your fruit to my people of Israel; for they are at hand to come.

Ezek. 36:9 For, behold, I am for you, and I will turn unto you, and ye shall be tilled and sown:

Ezek. 36:10 And I will multiply men upon you, all the house of Israel, even all of it: and the cities shall be inhabited, and the wastes shall be builded:

Ezek. 36:11 And I will multiply upon you man and beast; and they shall increase and bring fruit: and I will settle you after your old estates, and will do better unto you than at your beginnings: and ye shall know that I am the Lord.

Ezek. 36:12 Yea, I will cause men to walk upon you, even my people Israel; and they shall possess thee, and thou shalt be their inheritance, and thou shalt no more henceforth bereave them of men.

Ezek. 36:19 And I scattered them among the heathen, and they were dispersed through the countries: according to their way and according to their doings I judged them.

It was a shame to the Father that Israel did not live in His blessings. It's the same way now for us.

Ezek. 36:20 And when they entered unto the heathen, whither they went, they profaned my holy name, when they said to them, These are the people of the Lord, and are gone forth out of his land.

Israel became an embarrassment to Jehovah as the nations that dispersed them as they wondered out loud why their God couldn't do any better for His own people.

Ezek. 36:21 But I had pity for mine holy name, which the house of Israel had profaned among the heathen, whither they went.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Ezek. 36:22 Therefore say unto the house of Israel, thus saith the Lord God; I do not this for your sakes, O house of Israel, but for mine holy name's sake, which ye have profaned among the heathen, whither ye went.

Ezek. 36:23 And I will sanctify my great name, which was profaned among the heathen, which ye have profaned in the midst of them; and the heathen shall know that I am the Lord, saith the Lord God, when I shall be sanctified in you before their eyes.

Ezek. 36:24 For I will take you from among the heathen, and gather you out of all countries, and will bring you into your own land.

Today we are seeing God doing exactly what He said He would do. He is bringing His people back into their land.

God is not done with the Jews.

Ezek. 36:25 Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you.

Ezek. 36:26 A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh.

Ezek. 36:27 And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them.

Ezek. 36:28 And ye shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; and ye shall be my people, and I will be your God.

Brim Note: God said many times that the Jews, in not walking in their covenant blessings, “profaned” His holy name. Deuteronomy 28 declares the visible blessings they were to walk in to reveal Him to the nations by walking in their covenant with the one true God.

The Book of Ephesians has been compared to the Book of Joshua. God had told Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob that He would give them the Land. Years later, Joshua came to the border of the Promised Land, and God instructed him to go in and possess the Land. The people had to possess the promise.

Similarly, God has made great promises to the Body of Christ. We have been raised with Christ. We are seated with Christ. But we have to possess that seat. We have to possess all the blessings that He has given us. We CAN walk in these spiritual blessings.

SESSION 1 ENDS HERE

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

SESSION 2 STARTS HERE

Chosen *In Him* Before the *Katabolē*

Ephesians 1:3–6 ESV

Eph. 1:3 ¶ Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us in Christ with every spiritual blessing in the heavenly places,

Eph. 1:4 even as he chose us in him before the foundation [*katabolē*] of the world, that we should be holy and blameless before him. In love

Eph. 1:5 he predestined us for adoption to himself as sons through Jesus Christ, according to the purpose of his will,

Eph. 1:6 to the praise of his glorious grace, with which he has blessed us in the Beloved.

Brim note: I used the English Standard Version because the punctuation in verse 4 puts the period after “before him.”

“he chose us”

God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, chose “us” the *ekklēsia*.

“in him”

In our Lord Jesus Christ.

“before the foundation [*katabolē*] of the world”

See the definition of *katabolē* below (in “The Foundation of the World.”)

1 Peter 1:18–20 KJV

1 Pet. 1:18 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, *as* silver and gold, from your vain conversation *received* by tradition from your fathers;

1 Pet. 1:19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot:

1 Pet. 1:20 Who verily was foreordained **before the** foundation [*katabolē*] of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you,

The following is excerpted from
CB Appendix
“The Foundation of the World”
(Appendix 146 from *The Companion Bible*)

To arrive at the true meaning of this expression, we must note that there are two words translated “foundation” in the New Testament: (1) *themelios*, and (2) *katabolē*.

The Noun, *themelios*, occurs in Luke 6:48–49, 14:29, Acts 16:26, Romans 15:20, 1 Corinthians 3:10–12, Ephesians 2:20, 1 Timothy 6:19, 2 Timothy 2:19, Hebrews 6:1, 11:10, Revelation 21:14, 19. It is never used of the world (*kosmos*) or the earth (*gē*). The corresponding Verb (*themelioō*) occurs in Matthew 7:25, Luke 6:48,

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Ephesians 3:17, Colossians 1:23, Hebrews 1:10 and 1 Peter 5:10. The verb is only once used of the earth (*gē*). Hebrews 1:10.

A comparison of all these passages will show that these are proper and regular terms for the English words "to found", and "foundation".

The Noun, *katabolē*, occurs in Matthew 13:35, 25:34, Luke 11:50, John 17:24, Ephesians 1:4, Hebrews 4:3, 9:26, 11:11, 1 Peter 1:20, Revelation 13:8, 17:8 and the corresponding Verb (*kataballō*) occurs in 2 Corinthians 4:9, Hebrews 6:1 and Revelation 12:10.

A comparison of all these passages (especially 2 Corinthians 4:9 and Revelation 12:10) will show that *kataballō* and *katabolē* are not the proper terms for founding and foundation, but the correct meaning is *casting down*, or *overthrow*.

...

The remarkable thing is that in all occurrences (except Hebrews 11:11) the word is connected with "the world" (Greek *kosmos*. Appendix 129.1), and therefore the expression should be rendered "the disruption (or ruin) of the world", clearly referring to the condition indicated in Genesis 1:2, and described in 2 Peter 3:5–6.

We see that He chose us in Him before the *katabolē* of the world (before the casting down, the overthrow).

Billye Brim, *The Blood and the Glory*

In some eternal moment, in some heavenly place, the One we call Savior agreed to fulfill the Father's great plan of redemption. First in Heaven, and eventually at Calvary, our Lord Jesus offered Himself through the Eternal Spirit, without spot to God. (Hebrews 9:14.)⁶

[Note the Trinity in this verse.]

Hebrews 9:14 KJV How much more shall the blood of **Christ**, who through **the eternal Spirit** offered himself without spot to **God**, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? (emphasis added)

**The following is excerpted from
Lesson Appendix 1
"The World That Then Was"**

Genesis 1:1–2 KJV

Gen. 1:1 ¶ In the beginning God created the heaven[s] and the earth.

Gen. 1:2 And the earth was **without form [tohu], and void[bohu]**; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.

Only God could state so succinctly all that is contained in verse one. What it does not contain is verse two.

⁶ Billye Brim, *The Blood and the Glory* (Tulsa: Harrison House, 1995), 52.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

To me, the greatest proof of a pre-Adamic civilization is the meaning of these two Hebrew words: *tohu v'bohu*.

“without form and void” = **tohu v'bohu**

Strong's Hebrew

8414. תֹהוּ תֹהוּ **tōhûw**, to'-hoo; ... confusion, empty place, without form, nothing, (thing of) nought, vain, vanity, waste, wilderness.

922. בֹהוּ בֹהוּ **bōhûw**, bo'-hoo; from an unused root (meaning to *be empty*); a *vacuity*, i.e. (superficially) an undistinguishable *ruin*:—emptiness, void.

Brown, Driver, Briggs

תֹהוּ [tōhûw] noun. masculine. formlessness, confusion, unreality, emptiness —

1. *formlessness*, of *primaeval earth*, of *land reduced to primaeval chaos (and voidness)*; *city of chaos* (of ruined city); = *nothingness, empty space*; of empty, *trackless waste*.

2. *fig. of what is empty, unreal*, as *idols* (coll. of idol makers), *groundless arguments or considerations*, *moral unreality or falsehood*; = *a thing of nought, worthlessness*.⁷

בֹהוּ [bōhûw] noun [masculine] emptiness, always with בֹהוּ —cross reference תהו ובהו

[Genesis 1:2](#) of primeval earth; [Jeremiah 4:23](#) of earth under judgment.⁸

God certainly did not create a chaotic, confused, worthless, empty wasteland.

God's creation in Genesis 1:1 was perfect. For His work is perfect and glorious.

God's Work Is Perfect

Deuteronomy 32:4 KJV *He is the Rock, his work is perfect . . .*

God's Work Is Glorious

Psalms 111:3 KJV *His work is honourable [1935] and glorious [1926] . . .*

...

Genesis 1:1 describes Creation in Eternity Past—before time.

Genesis 1:2 describes the condition of earth after a **cataclysmic** event.

Genesis 1:2 begins the account of “re-creative” days.

There is as much “*time*” between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2 as true science requires.

... scientists have calculated that Earth is 4.54 billion years old, with an error range of 50 million years.⁹

Brim note: Only God knows how old earth is—but this is the latest theory.

I certainly believe it is more than 6,000 years old which is when Adam was created, and time (as we know it) began.

⁷ Francis Brown, S. R. Driver, and Charles A Briggs, *A Hebrew and English Lexicon of the Old Testament* (1907; repr., London: Oxford University Press, 1966), 1062.

⁸ Brown, Driver, and Briggs, 96.

⁹ Nola Taylor Tillman, "How old is Earth?" Space.com, August 20, 2021, <https://www.space.com/24854-how-old-is-earth.html>.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

God: Eternity and Time

On my first trip to Australia, I called my daughter Brenda. Her then young and very inquisitive son, Jared, answered the phone. I decided to get him going, so I said, “Hello, Jared, this is MiMi. I’m calling from tomorrow. Don’t be concerned about yesterday; it turned out all right.”

It is possible when flying from Sydney, to arrive in Los Angeles before you left Sydney (that is, as far as time on the clock and calendar is concerned).

On the way home from that first trip, the captain made an announcement that we had just crossed the International Date Line. At that, I heard distinctly the authoritative voice of the Holy Spirit in my spirit.

God invented time—precisely, scientifically, mathematically.
He measured out a piece of eternity and called it “time” for His dealings with man.
Each passing second counts off time until the end of time and its usefulness to God.

God Inhabits Eternity

Isaiah 57:15 ASV For thus saith the high and lofty One that inhabiteth eternity, whose name is Holy: ...

...

The World That Then Was

God certainly did not create the heavens and the earth *tohu v’bohu*.

It became *tohu v’bohu* after a **cataclysmic** event.

2 Peter 3:5–6 KJV

2 Pet. 3:5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water:

2 Pet. 3:6 Whereby **the world that then was**, being overflowed with water, perished:

E. W. Bullinger, *The Companion Bible*

1. “THE WORLD THAT THEN WAS” (2 Peter 3:5, 6). ... Creation in eternity past, to which all Fossils and “Remains” belong.¹⁰

...

Not Created *Tohu*, but Became *Tohu*

The Hebrew word *hiyah*, translated “was” in Genesis 1:2—“And the earth was without form and void ...”—can also be translated “became.”

In many places, it is translated “and it was so.”

See Genesis 2:7, 4:3, 9:15, 19:26; Exodus 32:1; Deuteronomy 27:9; 2 Samuel 7:24.

And it is translated “*came to pass*.”

See Genesis 4:14, 22:1, 23:1, 27:1; Joshua 4:1, 5:1; 1 Kings 13:32; Isaiah 14:24.

...

¹⁰ E. W. Bullinger, *The Companion Bible* (1922; repr., Grand Rapids: Kregel Publications, 1990), 3.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Isaiah 45:18 KJV For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, **he created it not in vain [tohu]**, he formed it to be inhabited: I *am* the LORD; and *there is* none else.

Brim Note: Isaiah 45:18 is clear. **God did not create the earth *tohu*.** He did not create it a worthless, chaotic wasteland of confusion. He created it to be inhabited.

The Perfect Earth

All the following is quoted from an article by Hart Armstrong in "*The Defender*" *The Family of Faith Magazine* November 1976. (My copy is addressed to Rev. Kenneth E. Hagin.)

Hart Armstrong, *The Defender*

- ... the pre-Adamic earth may have been a Paradise, possibly under the reign of Lucifer, a great created being of ages past, whose rebellion and sin against God brought downfall to him and destruction to our earth and to the intelligent beings inhabiting it, who may have been under his dominion, under God.
- That this destruction must have come through a universal deluge of waters, similar to that of Noah; for the Bible infers there was a destruction of earth by a flood of waters previous to that of Noah ...

Certainly, knowing God as we do, we should have reason to expect it was a perfect creation. Why should not a perfect God bring forth a perfect creation?

Heavenly Rejoicing

In Job 38 we are given what seems to be a pre-historic picture of the joy and rejoicing in the heavenly realm when God first created the earth. God asks Job, "Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? ... Or laid its cornerstones, when the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?" (Job 38:4, 6, 7).

Is this a poetic figure? Or does it tell of a day which actually occurred? Can we think these sublime sons of God shouted over a chaotic mass such as evolution would have us think originally constituted the earth? Or a planet without form, void and empty, and covered with water and darkness?

No, I believe it was a beautiful world that called forth this oratorio of the sons of God. It was because this planet had been created by God as a place which was to be the sphere of their dominion. Surely among the glorious sons of God that day, the brightest was Lucifer, the best of God's angelic hosts. And it was probably he whom God had selected to be the monarch of the new realm...which God had created.

When did this take place? Only God, and the angels who participated could tell us... Men of science keep pushing farther and farther back into the probable date of the earth's age. Scientists moved back beyond millions of years in their estimates, then to billions—again we say, only God can know the real age of earth. ¹¹

¹¹ Hart Armstrong, *The Defender*, November 1976.

The following is excerpted from the Supplement:

“The Hebrew Language”

HL-15—“*Tohu v’Bohu (Without Form and Void)*”

Genesis Chapter 1:1–2 בְּרֵאשִׁית

- א** בְּרֵאשִׁית, בָּרָא אֱלֹהִים, אֶת הַשָּׁמַיִם, וְאֶת הָאָרֶץ. **1** In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.
- ב** וְהָאָרֶץ, הִיְתָה תְהוֹ וְבוֹהוּ, וְחֹשֶׁךְ, עַל-פְּנֵי תְהוֹם; וְרוּחַ אֱלֹהִים, מְרַחֶפֶת עַל-פְּנֵי הַמַּיִם. **2** And the earth was **without form [tohu], and void [bohu]**; and darkness *was* upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.

Isaiah Chapter 45:18 יִשְׁעִיהוּ

- יח** כִּי כֹה אָמַר-יְהוָה בּוֹרֵא הַשָּׁמַיִם הוּא הָאֱלֹהִים, יִצְרֵהָ אֶרֶץ וְעָשָׂהּ הוּא כּוֹנֵנָה--**לֹא-תְהוֹ בְרֵאשִׁית**, לְשֶׁבֶת יִצְרָה; אֲנִי יְהוָה, וְאֵין עוֹד. **18** For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens, He is God; that formed the earth and made it, He established it, He created it **not a waste**, He formed it to be inhabited: I am the LORD, and there is none else.

Jeremiah Chapter 4:23–27 יִרְמִיָּהוּ

- כג** רָאִיתִי, אֶת-הָאָרֶץ, וְהִנֵּה-תְהוֹ, וְבוֹהוּ; וְאֶל-הַשָּׁמַיִם, וְאֵין אִוְרָם. **23** I beheld the earth, and, lo, it was **waste and void**; and the heavens, and they had no light.
- כד** רָאִיתִי, הַהָרִים, וְהִנֵּה, רָעִשִׁים; וְכָל-הַגְּבָעוֹת, הִתְקַלְקְלוּ. **24** I beheld the mountains, and, lo, they trembled, and all the hills moved to and fro.
- כה** רָאִיתִי, וְהִנֵּה אֵין הָאָדָם; וְכָל-עוֹף הַשָּׁמַיִם, נָדְדוּ. **25** I beheld, and, lo, there was no man, and all the birds of the heavens were fled.
- כו** רָאִיתִי, וְהִנֵּה הַכְּרָמַל הַמְדֻבָּר; וְכָל-עָרָיו, נִתְצוּ מִפְּנֵי יְהוָה--מִפְּנֵי חֲרוֹן אַפָּיו. {ס} **26** I beheld, and, lo, the fruitful field was a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the LORD, and before His fierce anger. {S}

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

כֹּזְבֵי כָּל-הָאָרֶץ ; וְכָלָהּ, לֹא תִהְיֶה אֶרֶץ אֶשָׁה. 27 For thus saith the LORD: The whole land shall be desolate; yet will I not make a full end.

The following is excerpted from
Lesson Appendix 2
“Lucifer’s Fall”

...

Jeremiah 4:23–26 KJV

Jer. 4:23 I beheld the earth, and, lo, *it was* without form, and void [*tohu v'bohu*]; and the heavens, and they *had* no light.

Jer. 4:24 I beheld the mountains, and, lo, they trembled, and all the hills moved lightly.

Jer. 4:25 I beheld, and, lo, *there was* no man, and all the birds of the heavens were fled.

Jer. 4:26 I beheld, and, lo, the fruitful place *was* a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the LORD, *and* by his fierce anger.

God caused Jeremiah to look into eternity past and to see the day when judgment fell on “the world that then was” and earth became *tohu v'bohu*. For the prophet clearly describes a horrifying day when:

Light was removed. (verse 23)

God removed Earth’s light. Not just its natural light. But Light Himself. God is Light (1 John 1:5). God removed Himself from having to do with the earth.

For a long time, a big question among scientists was “What happened to the dinosaurs?” A wide range of theories—some quite funny—were put forth. But recently many scientists have agreed on a theory that the last of the dinosaurs died on one cataclysmic day. They believe that a widespread mass extinction of animal life occurred when an asteroid collided with earth. Possibly they are coming closer to the truth.

Life was nowhere to be found. Even the birds were gone. (verse 25)

Of course, when God removed the Light of Life every creature died in an instant.

Mountains and hills shook. (v. 24)

I’ve wondered if this could have been when fault lines first occurred.

All the cities were destroyed. (v.26)

All—not some. Evidently “the world that then was” had cities. Via God’s supernatural system which far surpasses technology of today, the prophet watched a “replay” of their violent destruction.

And what, are we told, caused such total devastation?

The Presence of the LORD, by His fierce anger. (v. 26)

“The Presence of the Lord is as destructive of evil, as it is creative of good.”

—John G. Lake

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

What Made God So Angry?

A Rebellion so great it split the angelic hosts. A revolt against God led by the most beautiful being God had created, the Archangel, Lucifer. The following passage describes him in the beauty of his creation.

Ezekiel 28:12–15 KJV

Ezek. 28:12 Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus, and say unto him, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty.

Ezek. 28:13 Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created.

Ezek. 28:14 Thou *art* the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire.

Ezek. 28:15 Thou *wast* perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee.

Where Did The Iniquity Originate?

To meet the criteria for God’s handiwork—perfect and glorious—the beings He designed to work with Him must contain a certain “thing.” That “thing” is dangerous to the Creator. But His created beings would be nothing more than puppets without it. *That “thing” is a free will.*

...

God gave Lucifer—as He gave to all the angels—a free will in the day of his creation. He must have used it to worship and please God for some measure of Eternity. How long the Bible does not reveal. But it does reveal that he was the first to turn his will against the Father’s will and it caused his fall.

How did he fall? How did it happen? The following passage begins with those questions apparently asked by the kings of nations whom Satan deceived (Isaiah 14:9,10). And it supplies the answer.

Isaiah 14:12–14 KJV

Is. 14:12 How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! *how* art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!

Is. 14:13 For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north:

Is. 14:14 I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High.

Lucifer’s five treasonous “I wills” reveal much.

“I will ascend into heaven.”

His kingdom, his domain, was in a place from which he had to ascend (go up) to carry out his rebellious plan.

“I will exalt my throne above the stars of God.”

Lucifer had a throne, and therefore a kingdom.

“I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north.”

This describes the place of God’s throne. Lucifer was after the throne of God.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

“I will ascend above the heights of the clouds.”

The atmosphere of Lucifer’s kingdom included clouds—clouds he would surmount in an attempt to exalt his throne. Many Bible scholars agree that his kingdom was here on earth. It was “the world that then was.”

“I will be like The Most High.”

All this entails we do not know. But his later temptation of Jesus reveals he wanted to receive rather than to give worship. And from observation of the earthly powers and religions he deceives, his plan includes ruling the world.

There was a real “star wars!”

Lucifer deceived even some of the angels and led an organized revolt against The Most High God.

What was the outcome?

Jesus told us. “And He said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven” (Luke 10:18).

I believe Lucifer’s rebellion so angered God that He removed Himself from the environs of earth sending it into a chaotic wasteland covered with dark waters.

And God’s judgment of this rebellion is when what the N.T. Greek refers to as the *katabole* of the cosmos (world). It’s meaning is *casting down* or *overthrow*. However it is often translated in the King James “the foundation of the world.” See The Companion Bible Appendix 146.

“The disruption of the world” is an event forming a great dividing line in the dispensation of ages. In Genesis 1:1 we have the founding of the world, but in Genesis 1:2, we have its overthrow.

Our Eternal Place: Before Him

Ephesians 1:4 ESV even as he chose us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and blameless **before him**.

The place (Hebrew: *ha makom*) of the church, the *ekklesia*, for eternity, is before the Father (before the face of the Father, in the very presence of the Father).

“before him”

Greek κατενώπιον (*katenópion*, kat-en-o'-pee-on)

Joseph Henry Thayer, *Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament*

katenópion, adverb, ... over against, opposite, **before the face of**, before the presence of, in the sight of, before.¹²

¹² Joseph Henry Thayer, *Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament* (New York: Harper & Brothers, 1889), 339.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

John 14:1-3 KJV

John 14:1 ¶ Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me.

John 14:2 In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.

John 14:3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also.

In this discourse, Jesus said that He was going to the Father.

See also John 14:6, 12, 20, 28; 16:5, 16, 28; 17:11.

God has good places in the Millennium for the Jews and the Sheep Nations, but only the Church goes to the Father.

We were chosen before the *katabolē* to be holy and blameless before Him, before His face, in His very presence.

John 14:6, 12, 28 KJV

John 14:6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.

John 14:12 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father.

John 14:28 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I.

John 16:5, 16, 28-29 KJV

John 16:5 But now I go my way to him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

John 16:16 A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father.

John 16:28 I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father.

John 16:29 His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no proverb.

John 17:11 KJV

John 17:11 And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are.

END SESSION 2

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

SESSION 3 STARTS HERE

Grace

Ephesians 1:4-6 ESV

Eph. 1:4 ... In love

Eph. 1:5 he predestined [foreordained] us for adoption to himself as sons through Jesus Christ, according to the purpose of his will,

Eph. 1:6 to **the praise of his glorious grace**, with which he has blessed [Greek: *charitoō* = “engraced”] us in the Beloved.

Ephesians 1:6 KJV To the praise of the glory of his grace [Greek: *charis*], wherein he hath made us accepted [Greek: *charitoō*] in the beloved.

“*he has blessed us*” (ESV) or “*he hath made us accepted*” (KJV)

Greek: ἐχαρίτωσεν ἡμᾶς = *echaritōsen hēmas* = engraced us

William D. Mounce, *Greek-English Dictionary*

[G/K G5923] χαρίτω charitoō 2x to favor, visit with favor, to make an object of favor, to gift, Eph. 1:6; pass. to be visited with free favor, be an object of gracious visitation, Lk. 1:28 [Strong's G5487]¹³

Ephesians 1:7-8 KJV

Eph. 1:7 In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, **according to the riches of his grace**;

Eph. 1:8 Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence;

F. W. Grant, *The Numerical Bible*

... what we are ... is to the praise of the glory of His grace. ... the result must be **to the praise of the glory of His grace** [1:6]. ... He points out now ... the grace side of things. ... He has not merely revealed to us that which is our own blessing, we are made to know the fulness of His purpose ...¹⁴

Brim Note: **We will remember this when we get to Ephesians 2:7**

“the riches of his grace ... abounded toward us”

This Epistle shows us that we are seated with Him, sharing throne rights.

Those rights are applicable to those who have received this abounding grace.

¹³ William D. Mounce, ed., *Mounce's Complete Expository Dictionary of Old & New Testament Words* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 2006), 1310.

¹⁴ F.W. Grant, *The Numerical Bible- Vol 6 Acts to 2 Corinthians* (Including Eph.) (New York: Bible Truth Depot, 1897), 324-325. <https://archive.org/details/numericalbiblebe06gran/>

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

And it is those who are given the right and the responsibility to rule and reign as kings in this life.

Romans 5:17 KJV For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.

Dispensational Purpose

We live in what is known as the Dispensation of Grace.

Ephesians 1:9-10 KJV

Eph. 1:9 Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself:

Eph. 1:10 That **in the dispensation of the fulness of times** he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; *even* in him:

Ephesians 1:9-10 AMPC

Eph. 1:9 Making known to us the mystery (secret) of His will (of His plan, of His purpose). [And it is this:] In accordance with His good pleasure (His merciful intention) which He had previously purposed *and* set forth in Him,

Eph. 1:10 [He planned] for the maturity of the times *and* the climax of the ages to unify all things *and* head them up *and* consummate them in Christ, [both] things in heaven and things on the earth.

"in the dispensation"

To rightly divide the Word, in addition to seeing the three groups of peoples, one must know that **there are ages and dispensations** in God's dealings with man.

We live in the dispensation of grace. Our gospel (good news) is the gospel of grace. We are now saved by grace through faith.

Emphasis added in the following verses:

1 Corinthians 9:17 KJV For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will, a **dispensation** of the gospel is committed unto me.

Ephesians 3:2 KJV If ye have heard of the **dispensation** of the grace of God which is given me to you-ward:

Colossians 1:25 KJV Whereof I am made a minister, according to the **dispensation** of God which is given to me for you, to fulfil the word of God;

Acts 20:24 KJV But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the **gospel** of the **grace** of God.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Galatians 1:6 KJV ¶ I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the **grace** of Christ unto another **gospel**:

“the fulness of times” (KJV)

The Wuest translation reads: “an administration of the completion of the epochs of time.” We don’t know exactly when this is.

“fulness”

William D. Mounce, *Greek-English Dictionary*

[G/K G4445] πλήρωμα *plērōma* 17x *that which fills up; full measure, entire content... full extent, full number, Gal. 4:4; Eph. 1:10; ... a fulfilling, perfect performance, ... complete attainment... full development, plenitude, ... fulfillment; fullness.* [Strong's G4138]¹⁵

Time

On my first trip to Australia, I called my daughter, Brenda. Her young and very inquisitive son, Jared, answered the phone. I decided to get him going, so I said, “Hello, Jared, this is MiMi. I’m calling from tomorrow. Don’t be concerned about yesterday; it turned out all right.”

It is possible when flying from Sydney, to arrive in Los Angeles before you left Sydney. That is, as far as time on the clock and calendar is concerned.

On the way home from that first trip, the Captain announced: “We are crossing the International Date Line.” At that, I heard distinctly the authoritative Voice of the Holy Spirit in my spirit.

God invented time.

Precisely.

Scientifically.

Mathematically.

He measured out a piece of Eternity and called it Time for His dealings with man.

Each passing second counts off time until the end of time and its usefulness to God.

God has no need for time except as it relates to His dealings with man and His Great Plan of Redemption.

¹⁵ William D. Mounce, ed., *Mounce's Complete Expository Dictionary of Old & New Testament Words* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan, 2006), 1246.

Eternity

Isaiah 57:15 KJV For thus saith the high and lofty One that inhabiteth **eternity**
... (emphasis added)

Eternity: Hub of Wheel—Spokes: Time

God works in time to complete the redemptions of man and the Earth.

God's work is perfect. He is bringing His creation into perfection.

The future is as bright as God can make it.

I used to say that God knows the future better than we know the past. And of course, He does. But it is deeper than that. He knows the future because He lives there. He inhabits Eternity. As His Name יהוה declares: *He was, He is, He is to Come.*

Kenneth E. Hagin said, "When science discovered timelessness, they discovered God."

God is in no way affected or limited by time, except in His dealings with man and earth.

Sealed Unto Full Inheritance

Ephesians 1:11-14 KJV

Eph. 1:11 In whom also **we have obtained an inheritance**, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:

Eph. 1:12 **That [to the end that] we should be to the praise of his glory**, who first trusted in Christ.

Eph. 1:13 In whom ye also *trusted*, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were **sealed with that holy Spirit of promise**,

Eph. 1:14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, **unto the praise of his glory.**

Note: The "we" who first trusted. And the "ye" who also trusted.

I am not certain as to who these are, but the *Numerical Bible, Vol. 6* gives this thought on page 326 (I am paraphrasing here):

The "we" represents the Jewish first fruits.

The "ye" represents Gentiles who come in on equal footing.

| *“sealed with that Holy Spirit of promise”*

F. W. Grant, *The Companion Bible*

A seal affixed implies possession, or security, as well as being a distinctive mark.¹⁶

Ephesians 1:13-14 Wuest

“... having believed, you were sealed with the Spirit of the promise, The Holy Spirit, who is the token payment of our inheritance guaranteeing the full payment of all, looking forward to the redemption of the possession which is being preserved with a view to the praise of His glory.”

SESSION 3 CONTINUES IN LESSON 2 (EPHESIANS 1:15-19)

¹⁶ E. W. Bullinger, *The Companion Bible* (1922; repr., Grand Rapids: Kregel Publications, 1990), 1761.

EPHESIANS

CHAPTER 1:15-19

THE GLORY

SESSION 3 CONTINUES HERE

The Prayer for the Glorious Church

This Epistle is all about “The Glorious Church.”

Ephesians 5:25-27 KJV

Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church,
and gave himself for [her];
That He might sanctify and cleanse [her] with the washing of water
by the word,
That he might present [her] to himself
a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing;
but that [she] should be holy and without blemish.

The Holy Spirit-anointed prayer of Ephesians 1 is one of the great spiritual blessings we have been given. We can pray it for ourselves or, as Paul did, for other believers.

Ephesians 1:15-17 KJV

Eph. 1:15 ¶ Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints,

Eph. 1:16 Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers;

| Faith and Love: Prerequisites?

Ephesians 1:17 KJV That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the **Father of glory**, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the [full] knowledge of him:

“the Father of glory”

Paul’s prayer on behalf of the Ephesians is addressed to “**The Father of Glory.**”

“the spirit of wisdom and revelation”

Wisdom and revelation come “by the Spirit.” Paul explains this more completely in 1 Corinthians.

1 Corinthians 2:9-14 KJV

1 Cor. 2:9 But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

1 Cor. 2:10 But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.

1 Cor. 2:11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

1 Cor. 2:12 Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.

1 Cor. 2:13 Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.

1 Cor. 2:14 But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

“in the knowledge of him”

Wuest translates this as “in the sphere of a full knowledge of Him ...”

The Numerical Bible translates it as “in the full knowledge of him ...”

Colossians 2:2-3 KJV

Col. 2:2 That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ;

Col. 2:3 In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

Ephesians 1:18-20 KJV

Eph. 1:18 The eyes of your understanding [heart] being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints,

Eph. 1:19 And what *is* the exceeding greatness of his power [*dunameōs*] to usward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power,

Eph. 1:20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead,

“The eyes of your understanding”

This can be translated more literally “the eyes of your heart” (τοὺς ὀφθαλμοὺς τῆς καρδίας ὑμῶν = *tous ophthalmous tēs kardias humón*). καρδία = *kardia* = heart. Wisdom and revelation are received in the eyes of the inner man, the spirit.

“that ye may know ...”

The prayer is for spiritual enlightenment for three specific things:

- The hope of His calling.
- The riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints.
- The exceeding greatness of His power to usward who believe according to resurrection power.

All three have to do with The Glory.

The Hope of His Calling

The *ekklesia* is “called unto glory.”

Colossians 1:26-27 KJV

Col. 1:26 *Even* the mystery which hath been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints:

Col. 1:27 To whom God would make known what *is* the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is **Christ in you, the hope of glory:**

1 Thessalonians 2:12 KJV That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath **called you unto his kingdom and glory.**

2 Thessalonians 2:14 KJV Whereunto **he called you** by our gospel, **to the obtaining of the glory** of our Lord Jesus Christ.

When God said He would not share His glory with another, He was talking about false gods. We, the Body of Christ, are not “another.” We are called “to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.”

The Riches of the Glory of His Inheritance in the Saints

We have inherited God, so to speak.

God has inherited us. The Lord’s portion is His people.

His inheritance out of all the nations is Israel.

His inheritance out of all the people of the Earth is us, the Body of Christ.

Deuteronomy 32:9 KJV

For the Lord’s portion is his people; Jacob is the lot of his inheritance.

Resurrection Power

Romans 8:11 KJV But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

Romans 6:4 KJV Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as **Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father,** even so we also should walk in newness of life.

The glory of God is the presence of God. We are called to move from glory to glory to glory.

SESSION 3 ENDS HERE

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

EPHESIANS

THE BLOOD AND THE GLORY: The Revelation of the Glory to Me (Billye Brim)

SESSION 4 STARTS HERE

- I. **The early days (leading up to the revelation of the Glory)**
 - A. In the '70s, Dr. Billye Brim was a wife and mother
 - B. She went to work for Brother Kenneth E. Hagin
 1. Dr. Billye was responsible to take Brother Hagin's teachings and put them into print
 2. She really enjoyed her job
 - C. She had been called by God to preach when she was still a child
 1. Her denomination said she couldn't preach
 2. In their thinking, being a woman disqualified her from preaching
 - D. One of the earliest books that Dr. Billye put together was *The Woman Question*
 1. This book shows from Scripture that women can preach
 2. Dr. Billye was so stirred that God would permit her to preach that she cried
 3. She asked the Lord if this could be true
 - a. She had been taught that she would actually get in trouble at the Judgment Seat of Christ if she tried to preach
 - b. The Lord responded that she would be called out to preach one day
 - i. She was told that at that time she still needed training
 - ii. She was told that working for Br. Hagin was her "Bible school"
 - E. The Brim family felt the need to find a church that taught in a way that was similar to Br. Hagin
 1. For a time, they attended a church whose pastor, a former Baptist, had been filled with the Holy Spirit
 2. They decided not to continue attending there because of some false doctrine on "submission"
 3. A friend told Dr. Billye that there was a church just outside of Tulsa where the congregants were permitted to raise their hands in praise
 - a. The church was a Friends (Quaker) church
 - b. Cooper Beatty, a former Friends college professor, was the pastor

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

4. The church had been birthed in prayer by Sister Rachel Teafatiller
 - a. The Lord had directed Sr. Rachel to go there, instructing her to pray for this church to be “birthed”
 - b. At the time, it was an existing church, but it was very “dry”
 - c. Sr. Rachel felt very lonely there
 - d. The Lord told her to pray for someone to come to that church who could be her friend
5. The next Sunday, all six of the Brims came to church there
6. The church had Sunday School before the main service and the Brims were in attendance
 - a. Rachel’s son Wayne Teafatiller was also at the Sunday school service
 - i. He had just recently come back to the Lord
 - ii. He had both of his arms in casts
 - iii. He was a bull rider in the rodeo and had broken his arms when he was thrown
 - iv. He thought that his arms were broken because, as a teenager, he had broken a vow to never go to a movie
 - b. Dr. Billye had just finished Br. Hagin’s book *Don’t Blame God*
 - i. She couldn’t stop herself from sharing the truth with Wayne
 - ii. She explained that Wayne’s accident was the result of the devil trying to discourage a new believer and not God’s doing
 - iii. Wayne nominated Dr. Billye to be the Sunday School teacher
 - iv. The Sunday School teacher seconded the nomination
7. Dr. Billye learned from Br. Hagin as she put together his materials at work and then taught the lessons in her Sunday School class
 - a. The classes that started with a handful of people in the front of the church grew to fill half of the sanctuary
 - b. They continued to grow until they filled the whole sanctuary

II. Dr. Billye began to receive the revelation of the Glory

- A. She began to see that the whole Word of God is God’s plan for the whole Earth
- B. She began to study and to teach the plan from the beginning—Genesis 1:1
- C. She saw that Genesis 1:2 spoke of the earth becoming a *tohu v’bohu* mess—covered with murky waters
 1. God’s creation was glorious

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

2. This was the only spot in the universe that wasn't glorious any more
- D. God began to teach Dr. Billye with visions
- E. In one vision, the angels were contemplating the dark spot in the universe that had murky waters
 1. Dr. Billye didn't know if they had discussed the spot before this time
 2. The Holy Spirit began to hover over the spot
 3. She began to hear the angels' whisperings about the new developments
- F. God told Dr. Billye that, "I didn't do this in a corner."
- G. Jeremiah 4:23-27 is the account of what the Lord showed Jeremiah concerning the fall or *katabole* of the earth
 1. The first thing that was removed was the light
 2. All living things were suddenly gone
 3. It was a result of the fierce anger of the Lord
- H. When God began the re-creation of the Earth, the first thing He did was to bring back the light
 1. The light He brought on the first day was not the sun, moon, and stars
 2. The light He brought on that day was himself
 3. He had removed himself from working with the Earth, but was now returning light and life to it
- I. God instituted a whole new order of things
 1. He numbered the days: first day, second day, third day, fourth day, fifth day, sixth day
 2. The sixth day caused the angels the most astonishment
 - a. The Lord God "stepped to center stage"
 - b. He said, "Let us make man in Our image, after Our likeness: and let them have dominion ..."
 - i. God made fish to swim, birds to fly and creeping things to creep
 - ii. God made man to have dominion
 - iii. Man will either dominate or be dominated
 3. After man had been created, the angels questioned what this creature was
 - a. In Psalm 8, one of the angels actually dared to ask the Lord
 - b. Hebrews 2 tells us that this was an angel asking, "What is man?"

Hebrews 2:5-7 KJV

Heb. 2:5 ¶ For unto the angels hath he not put in subjection the world to come, whereof we speak.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Heb. 2:6 But one [one what? One angel] in a certain place testified, saying, What is man, that thou art mindful of him? or the son of man, that thou visitest him?

Heb. 2:7 Thou madest him a little lower than the angels; thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands:

- c. The angel in Psalm 8 was impressed with God's creation, but had a question about it

Psalm 8:3–6 KJV

Psa. 8:3 ¶ When I consider thy heavens, the work of thy fingers, the moon and the stars, which thou hast ordained;

Psa. 8:4 What is man, that thou art mindful of him? and the son of man, that thou visitest him?

Psa. 8:5 For thou hast made him a little lower than the angels, and hast crowned him with glory and honour.

Psa. 8:6 Thou madest him to have dominion over the works of thy hands; thou hast put all *things* under his feet:

- i. He didn't understand that "man" came from the mind of God
 - ii. He didn't understand why God would go visit one of His creatures
4. The social order until that time was well established. It was:
 - a. God the Father
 - b. God the Son
 - c. God the Holy Spirit
 - d. The archangels
 - e. The angels
 5. When God created man, He "made him a little lower than the angels"
 - a. The word "angels" was actually "Elohim"
 - b. This was the plural word for God, depicting the Trinity
 - c. So man was placed just below God in this new order
 6. God fixed man's place in His plan
 - a. He crowned him as a king to rule and reign
 - b. His crown was made of the glory
 7. God's presence is His glory and this was the substance of man's crown and his clothing
 - a. Man was not naked, because he was covered with God's glory
 - b. He was able to fellowship with and communicate with God easily because God's presence was his clothing
 8. God gave man dominion over the rest of creation
 - a. Adam knew how to handle authority
 - b. He spoke and the animals came to him

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- c. Charles Capps used the same commanding power to command fish to come to him when he went fishing
 - 9. Adam was told to “keep” the Garden of Eden
 - a. That word in the Hebrew is “guard”
 - b. There is no need to guard something if there is no intruder
 - 10. Today, the garden we guard is our home and family
 - a. Dr. Billye decided that the devil would not be permitted entrance to her garden
 - i. She decided that not one of her children would have a broken bone
 - ii. This included her son who rode bulls in the rodeo
 - b. She also learned that she could bind demons that would try to work through referees in her daughter’s basketball games
- III. Dr. Billye received a download of the whole “Story of the Glory” from the Lord**
- A. Early one Sunday morning, while getting ready for church, the Lord asked Dr. Billye a question
 - 1. He asked, “Do you know Romans 3:23?”
 - 2. She was very glad that she knew that Scripture and she quoted it, “For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.”
 - 3. The Lord showed Dr. Billye the fall of man from His perspective
 - a. She felt as though she was about to faint
 - b. Just then, the Lord strengthened her by causing what seemed like a ticker tape to go into her
 - c. On the ticker tape were the words, “But the Captain of your salvation shall bring many sons to glory.” (Hebrews 2:10)
 - 4. The man had been crowned with the glory, but then fell from the glory
 - a. Now there was a great gulf between God and the man
 - b. The devil taunted the Lord with, “What are you gonna do now? What are you gonna do now? What are you gonna do now?”
 - i. God had publicly and prominently declared that man would have dominion over His works
 - ii. He had declared that He and man would work together
 - iii. Satan thought that man would never again be able to work in God’s presence
 - c. God didn’t answer Satan
 - B. God told Dr. Billye that at the Fall, He wanted to grab fallen man and hug him
 - 1. The Lord showed this illustration to Dr. Billye using her son Terry as a representative of the fallen man

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

2. If God had grabbed the man and hugged him, He would have destroyed man
 - a. Man had become sin
 - b. God is a consuming fire, and what He consumes is sin
 - c. Hugging the man would have caused him to be consumed
 - d. Satan would have defeated God because there would be no man to do the work of His hands
3. This was God's position in the Fall
- C. God had a reason for not answering Satan when he asked, "What are you gonna do now?"
 1. Dr. Billye saw God represented by light
 2. There was a door with a knob on it in the middle of the light that said, "Top Secret"
 3. He wasn't formulating a plan; He had a plan since before the *katabole*
 4. God the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit had met in the Council Room of Heaven
 - a. The Father said, "I'm going to make a creature of blood."
 - b. He knew this creature would sin
 - c. God said He would put the life in the blood
 - d. If someone would live a perfect life in the flesh and then pour out their blood, He could redeem His creature
 - e. Jesus said He would do it (Hebrews 9:14)
 - f. The "Top Secret" plan was God's answer to Satan's question, "What are you gonna do now?"
 - g. This is one of God's mysteries. He has several "mysteries"
 - i. The mystery of Israel is in Romans 9, 10 and 11
 - ii. The mystery of iniquity is spoken of in 2 Thessalonians
 - iii. The mystery of the *ekklesia* (church) is "Christ in you the hope of glory."
- D. Until the Apostle Paul came along, nobody understood the mystery of the church
 1. The prophets may have prophesied about it, but they didn't understand it
 2. Romans 16:25 calls it, "the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began"
 3. Ephesians 3:9 says it is, "the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God"
 4. What better hiding place could there be?

1 Corinthians 2:1-8 KJV

1 Cor. 2:1 And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellency of speech or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimony of God.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

1 Cor. 2:2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified.

1 Cor. 2:3 And I was with you in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling.

1 Cor. 2:4 And my speech and my preaching *was* not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power:

1 Cor. 2:5 That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

1 Cor. 2:6 ¶ Howbeit we speak wisdom among them that are perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nought:

1 Cor. 2:7 But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, *even* the hidden *wisdom*, which God ordained before the world unto our glory:

1 Cor. 2:8 Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known *it*, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

- E. In this passage, Paul was beginning to reveal the mystery of the church
1. Among the baby Christians, Paul preached Jesus Christ and demonstrated the power of God
 2. When he got to preach to the mature, Paul was able to talk about the mystery
 - a. There was a plan to get those who had fallen from the glory, back to the glory
 - b. He was free to talk about it when he was preaching to the mature
 3. We are the Body of Christ and He is the Head; glory on Him is also on us

2 Corinthians 2:6–7 AMPC

2 Cor 2:6 Yet when we are among the full-grown (spiritually mature Christians who are ripe in understanding), we do impart a [higher] wisdom (the knowledge of the divine plan previously hidden); but it is indeed not a wisdom of this present age *or* of this world nor of the leaders *and* rulers of this age, who are being brought to nothing *and* are doomed to pass away.

2 Cor 2:7 But rather what we are setting forth is a wisdom of God once hidden [from the human understanding] and now revealed to us by God—[that wisdom] which God devised *and* decreed before the ages for our glorification [to lift us into the glory of His presence].

- F. In paragraph form, this is a synopsis of the revelation given to Dr. Billye:

The Father of glory sent the Lord of Glory to lift up the man who had been crowned with glory, but had fallen from the glory, back into the glory! of His presence. That's when I came to call the Bible, The Story of the Glory. If Satan had seen the plan, he never would have lifted God's spotless Lamb to the altar of the cross,

where His innocent blood could be shed to cleanse man: to once again stand in the glory of God's presence.

Colossians 1:26–27 KJV

Col. 1:26 *Even the mystery which hath been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints:*

Col. 1:27 *To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory*

- G. Satan had to be dismayed when he saw the Anointed One living inside of man, and becoming his hope of glory
 - 1. He wasn't saying, "What are you gonna do now?" any longer
 - 2. He was now saying, "Curses! Foiled again!"
 - 3. Anyone who believes on Jesus in his heart and confesses with his mouth that Jesus is Lord is born into this glory
 - a. John 3:16 says we are born from above
 - b. Galatians 4:26 says we are born from the Heavenly Jerusalem

IV. We must see ourselves as heavenly people

- A. We are born from above
 - 1. John 3:16 says we are born from above
 - 2. Galatians 4:26 says we are born from the Heavenly Jerusalem

Galatians 4:26 KJV But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.

John 3:3,7 AMPC

John 3:3 Jesus answered him, I assure you, most solemnly I tell you, that unless a person is born again (anew, from above), he cannot ever see (know, be acquainted with, and experience) the kingdom of God.

John 3:7 Marvel not [do not be surprised, astonished] at My telling you, You must all be born anew (from above).

Philippians 3:20 For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ:

- 3. "Conversation" is "*politeuma*", which means "citizenship"; our citizenship is in heaven

Hebrews 12:22–23 KJV

Heb. 12:22 But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,

Heb. 12:23 To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect,

- 4. We have come to heavenly Jerusalem, Mount Zion, the city of the living God
- 5. The roll (listing) of our citizenship is in Heaven

2 Corinthians 4:3–4, 6 KJV

2 Cor. 4:3 But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost:

2 Cor. 4:4 In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.

2 Cor. 4:6 For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to *give* the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.

- B. His light has shined in our hearts
 1. Satan can put the minds of unbelievers in a hammerlock
 2. We can bind Satan and command him to turn loose of any loved ones that are in that grip
 3. Satan's purpose is to keep the light from shining in our hearts
 4. God is saying to us, "Light be!"
- C. This is "Christ in you the hope of glory" (Colossians 1:27)
 1. Sitting in a church doesn't make you a Christian
 2. Sitting in a garage doesn't make you a car
 3. We can be instantly born again and be in the light
 4. The place of our birth is in Heaven

V. God's plan is to bring people back to the glory

- A. God had particular feast days to accomplish certain parts of His plan
 1. These feasts are called "moeds"
 2. On the Feast of Weeks—Shavuot—the Word of God (or the Torah) came
 3. In Acts 2, when the disciples of Jesus were gathered to celebrate this moed, the Spirit of God came on them
 4. The Baptism in the Holy Spirit and the Word came on the same day (the same moed)!

2 Corinthians 3:5–11, 18 KJV

2 Cor. 3:5 Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our sufficiency *is* of God;

2 Cor. 3:6 ¶ Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.

2 Cor. 3:7 But if the ministration of death, written *and* engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which *glory* was to be done away:

2 Cor. 3:8 How shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather glorious?

2 Cor. 3:9 For if the ministration of condemnation *be* glory, much more doth the ministration of righteousness exceed in glory.

2 Cor. 3:10 For even that which was made glorious had no glory in this respect, by reason of the glory that excelleth.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

2 Cor. 3:11 For if that which is done away *was* glorious, much more that which remaineth *is* glorious.

2 Cor. 3:18 But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, *even* as by the Spirit of the Lord.

- B. On a moed, Moses received the Ten Commandments, engraved by the Lord on stone
 1. The glory was so strong on the Word (the Ten Commandments) as Moses received it, his face shone
 2. The glory that came when the Holy Spirit was poured out was even more glorious
 3. The glory has degrees
- C. When believers read the Scriptures, they are looking at them as if they are a mirror
 1. An unbeliever has a veil over their face so they can't see the glory in the Word
 2. When a believer looks in this mirror, he is changed from one degree of glory to another
 3. We had already been born again and He said, "Light be!"
 4. Now we look into His Word for the glory and yield to the Holy Spirit
 5. Then it is the Holy Spirit's job to change us into ever-increasing levels of glory
 6. Some yield to the plan better than others

2 Corinthians 3:18 AMPC And all of us, as with unveiled face, [because we] continued to behold [in the Word of God] as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are constantly being transfigured into His *very own* image in ever increasing splendor *and* from one degree of glory to another; [for this comes] from the Lord [Who is] the Spirit.

- 7. The ones who will yield will be continuously changed until the only increase of glory that's possible will be the rapture of the church
- 8. Just as the earth couldn't hold Enoch, it won't be able to hold the glorious church
- D. The Church is destined to stand before God's face forever—this is our call to glory
 1. Salvation is not just what we are saved "from"—the devil and sin.
 2. Salvation is what we're saved "to"
 3. God and His glory are what we're saved "to"
- E. We are in the last of the last days—those days in which the glory of God will be manifested in greater degree in His Church

- F. The blood of Jesus is what cleanses us, covers us, and enables us to manifest His glory

VI. Brother Kenneth Hagin is the one that the Lord used to motivate Dr. Billye's pursuit of the glory

- A. The Lord had told Br. Hagin that He wanted him to look up all the Scriptures on the glory
 - 1. This was before personal computers were invented
 - 2. Brother Hagin had to look them up
 - 3. He had all the Scriptures typed up
 - 4. He kept them in the back of his Bible
- B. When the Lord led him to, he would get out the glory Scriptures and start reading them. For example:

Exodus 19:18, 20:18, 24:15-17 KJV

Ex. 19:18 And Mount Sinai was altogether on a smoke, because the Lord descended upon it in fire: and the smoke thereof ascended as the smoke of a furnace, and the whole mount[ain] quaked greatly.

Ex. 20:18 And all the people saw the thunders, and the lightnings, and the noise of the trumpet, and the mountain smoking ...

Ex. 24:15 And Moses went up into the mount, and a cloud covered the mount.

Ex. 24:16 And the glory of the LORD abode upon mount Sinai, and the cloud covered it six days: and the seventh day he called unto Moses out of the midst of the cloud.

Ex. 24:17 And the sight of the glory of the LORD *was* like devouring fire on the top of the mount in the eyes of the children of Israel.

- 1. When the Lord prompted Br. Hagin to read the Scriptures, a rolling wave of the glory of God would come into the room
- 2. Manifestations of the Holy Spirit would occur
- 3. Here and in the Bible, the manifestations of the glory were visible
 - a. The glory manifested as a cloud, as a fire and as smoke in the Tanach
 - b. People will be able to see the glory on us
- C. The Lord spoke through many old-time preachers (such as Kenneth E. Hagin, Jeanne Wilkerson and Clara Grace) about the coming of the glorious church
 - 1. Some other preachers were foretelling doom and gloom and the need to hide in a cave in the end-times
 - 2. In contrast, Br. Hagin, Sr. Wilkerson, and Sr. Grace saw a day when missing arms and legs would be supernaturally replaced
 - 3. They saw a day when the faces of the saints would be glowing with the glory of God

4. They saw people being convicted by the presence of God on a believer so much that the unbeliever would ask the believer how to get to God

- D. If the Lord wanted Br. Hagin to study the Scriptures on the glory, Dr. Billye concluded that it would be good for her to study them, too

VII. Dr. Billye shared an account of the manifestation of the glory of God in an unusual service

- A. A prominent woman in a very large church in the South wanted to get a well-known minister to preach the “faith message” at her church
 1. She wanted to get Kenneth Hagin to preach, and she was unable to
 2. She wanted to get Kenneth Copeland to preach, and she was unable to
 3. The pastor didn’t really want this message to be preached at his church
 4. A lot of people talked against this teaching
 5. The lady decided to ask Dr. Billye to come and preach
 6. The lady was a big giver in the church, so the pastor permitted it
 - a. But it would have to be on a Wednesday night
 - b. It would have to be in the “Praise Service,” where there were usually about 300 people (in this 6,000-member church)
 - c. She couldn’t preach more than forty-five minutes
 - d. If she went over her allotted time, a man would physically pull her off the stage
- B. When Dr. Billye first began to preach about what she called “The Story of the Glory,” she felt compelled to start at the beginning
 1. This would be in Genesis 1 with “*tohu v’bohu*”
 2. This message took 90 minutes to preach
- C. Dr. Billye prayed for direction from the Lord on what to minister
 1. He told her to preach on the glory
 2. She reminded the Lord that “the glory” was a ninety-minute message
 3. He continued to tell her to preach on the glory
- D. The Lord told Dr. Billye to pray Hebrews 12
 1. She informed the Lord that Ephesians 1 and 3 and Colossians 1 are prayers, but Hebrews 12 is not
 2. He told Dr. Billye to pray it anyway

Hebrews 12:18, 22–23 KJV

Heb. 12:18 ¶ For ye are not come unto the mount that might be touched ...

Heb. 12:22 But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,

Heb. 12:23 ... to the spirits of just men made perfect,

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- E. As she started reading Hebrews 12 aloud, she started seeing herself going up Mt. Sion
 - 1. She saw her Grandma Pickard and other saints who were already in Heaven, cheering her on
 - 2. She saw many angels and commanded them to bring people to the meeting
 - 3. She continued to ascend the mountain
 - a. She went up to God, the Judge of all
 - b. She went to Jesus, the Mediator of a better covenant
 - c. She went to the blood of Jesus that speaks better things than that of Abel
 - 4. She asked the Lord about what to preach again and again He said, "The glory."
- F. After Dr. Billye finished praying, the lady told her that the ministry time had been reduced to twenty-five minutes because a newly-saved young man was going to sing
- G. Dr. Billye thought maybe the anointing of the Holy Spirit would be on his music and carry the service into the glory
- H. It didn't work that way at all and her preaching time had now been reduced to twenty minutes
- I. Sister Billye took the congregation to Genesis 1:1 and began to preach at ninety miles per hour
 - 1. On the inside, Dr. Billye was telling the Lord that she herself didn't understand what she was preaching
 - 2. She questioned that, if she couldn't understand the teaching, how could they?
- J. She looked to the back of the room and saw a wave of the glory coming
 - 1. She was shocked because she felt the preaching couldn't produce this result
 - 2. As the wave passed over people, they began coming to the front
 - 3. One lady told everyone that she had been running from God for forty-five years
 - a. She had been driving past the church that day
 - b. Her steering wheel steered her into the church parking lot, and she couldn't make it move again
 - c. She said she had to get saved
 - 4. A young man shared a very similar story
- K. The Lord reminded Dr. Billye that she had commanded the angels to bring people to the meeting
- L. Suddenly, the whole congregation went wild
 - 1. The piano player was dancing across the stage

2. Dr. Billye thought they were just happy to see the pianist dancing
 3. They then told Dr. Billye that the pianist had been crippled and was even scheduled for surgery on her legs the next day
- M. We've got to let God's glory fill our temples and manifest in our lives
- N. Ephesians is the Book about this—The Story of the Glory

SESSION 4 ENDS HERE

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

EPHESIANS

CHAPTER 1:19–2:10

Ministry in the Heavens: The Authority of the Believer

SESSION 5 STARTS HERE

See *The Authority of the Believer*, page 85.

If you could only see it: the very air about you is infested with devils But we are not afraid, because there are twice as many angels.”—Kenneth E. Hagin

Glory

The Hebrew word for “glory” is **כְּבוֹד** (*kâbôd = kaw-bode*). It comes from the root word **כָּבַד** (*kâbêd = kaw-bade*), which means “to be heavy.” In a bad sense, *kâbêd* can mean “severe, burdensome”; in a good sense, it can mean “honored, rich.” The word translated “glory” (*kâbôd*), then, can be rendered “heavy with everything good.”

The presence of God can be manifested as a heavy, weighty presence (in a positive sense). Sometimes it can seem so heavy you can barely move (or even not move at all).

The unseen realm is just as real as what we can see.

You don’t have authority over people; you do have authority over demons.

Enlightened Eyes

Paul told the Ephesians that he was praying for God to give them s spirit of wisdom and revelation and that the eyes of their understanding (heart) would be enlightened.

Ephesians 1:17–20 KJV

Eph. 1:17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him:

Eph. 1:18 The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints,

Eph. 1:19 And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power,

Eph. 1:20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set *him* at his own right hand in the heavenly *places*,

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

To review, for what purposes did Paul pray that the eyes of our heart would be enlightened?

- The hope of His calling.
- The riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints.
- The exceeding greatness of His power (*dunamis*) to usward who believe according to resurrection power.

Ephesians 1:19-23 KJV

Eph. 1:19 And what *is* the exceeding greatness of his power (*dunamis*) to usward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power,

Eph. 1:20 Which he wrought in Christ, **when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places,**

Eph. 1:21 Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world [αἰών = *aión* = age], but also in that which is to come:

Eph. 1:22 And hath put all *things* under his feet, and gave him *to be* the head over all *things* to the church,

Eph. 1:23 Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

| ***“head over all things to the church”***

John MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*

Let us reverse the words to bring out more clearly their deep significance: “Head to the church over all things.” His being Head over all things is for the Church’s sake, that the Church, His Body, may be head over all things through Him.¹⁷

In Genesis 1, God gave man dominion over all things. In Christ, dominion has been restored. You are over all things; they are not over you.

John 20:19-22 KJV

John 20:19 ¶ Then the same day at evening, being the first *day* of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, **Peace be unto you.**

John 20:20 And when he had so said, he shewed unto them *his* hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord.

John 20:21 Then said Jesus to them again, **Peace be unto you:** as *my* Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

John 20:22 And when he had said this, he breathed on *them*, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost:

¹⁷ John A. MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer* (Branson: A Glorious Church Fellowship, 2007, 2015), 19.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Romans 5:1 KJV ¶ Therefore being justified by faith, **we have peace with God** through our Lord Jesus Christ:

Ephesians 1:20–23 KJV

Eph. 1:20 Which he wrought in Christ, **when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places,**

Eph. 1:21 Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come:

Eph. 1:22 And hath put all *things* under his feet, and gave him *to be* the head over all *things* to the church,

Eph. 1:23 Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

Ephesians 2:1–3 KJV

Eph. 2:1 ¶ **And you** hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins;

“And you”

This phrase is governed by the action in 1:20. God raised Him (Christ), and He raised you.

Verses 2 and 3 comprise a parenthetical statement.

Eph. 2:2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience:

Satan is not in hell—yet. He presently operates as the “prince of the power of the air.” He is working down through people. It is over him and his demonic spirits that we have been given authority. He knows his time is short. The Body of Christ needs to rise up and take her authority.

Eph. 2:3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

Satan may throw “fiery darts” at you, but he doesn’t know if they are effective—unless you signal somehow that he hit the mark. We don’t need to be afraid of him.

Philippians 1:28 KJV And in nothing terrified by your adversaries: which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God.

| Satan is watching you to see if you fear.

Psalms 27:1, 11 KJV

Psa. 27:1 ¶ The LORD *is* my light and my salvation; whom shall I fear? the LORD *is* the strength of my life; of whom shall I be afraid?

Psa. 27:11 Teach me thy way, O LORD, and lead me in a plain path, because of mine enemies.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

“mine enemies”

The word translated “enemies” can also mean “watchers.” So “mine enemies” can also mean “those who watch me” or “watchful foes.” Our adversaries are watching to see if we are operating outside of love. That opens the door for the enemy to infiltrate.

Ephesians 2:4–10 KJV

Eph. 2:4 ¶ But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us,

Eph. 2:5 Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)

Eph. 2:6 And hath raised *us* up together, and made *us* sit together in heavenly *places* in Christ Jesus:

| We are “up there,” seated with Christ at the right hand of the Father.

Eph. 2:7 That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in *his* kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.

Eph. 2:8 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: *it is* the gift of God:

Eph. 2:9 Not of works, lest any man should boast.

Eph. 2:10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

| You are not saved by works, but when you accept Christ as Savior, He has a path for you.

John A. MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer****Preface***

The rapidly approaching end of the age is witnessing a tremendous increase in the activity of the powers of darkness . . .

To meet the situation, the Church of Christ needs a new conception of prayer. The urgent call is for men and women, wholly yielded to the Lord, whose eyes have been enlightened to see the **ministry in the heavenlies** to which they have been called. Such believers . . . may in union with the great Head of the Body, exercise an authority to which the powers of the air must give place wherever challenged (emphasis added).¹⁸

Resist the devil, and he must flee from you. The Word commands it.

Kenneth E. Hagin, *The Believer's Authority****Foreword***

Back in the 1940s, I asked myself the question, “Do we have authority that we don’t know about—that we haven’t discovered—that we’re not using?”

¹⁸ MacMillan, xiii-xiv.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

I had had little glimpses of spiritual authority once in a while. Like others, I had stumbled upon it and had exercised it without knowing what I was doing. I wondered, “Is the Spirit of God trying to show me something?” So I began to study along this line, think along this line, feed along this line—and I began to see more and more light.

An article in *The Pentecostal Evangel* prompted my study on the words “power” and “authority.” Then I came across a wonderful pamphlet entitled *The Authority of the Believer* by John A. MacMillan, a missionary to China [and the Philippines] who later edited *The Alliance Weekly* ...

As a result of my studies, I concluded that we as a Church have authority on the earth that we’ve never yet realized—authority that we’re not using.

A few of us have barely gotten to the edge of that authority, but before Jesus comes again, there’s going to be a whole company of believers who will rise up with the authority that is theirs. They will know what is theirs, and they will do the work that God intended they should do.¹⁹

Now let’s look at some Scriptures that talk about what we have authority over and what we are to stay away from.

Leviticus 19:31 KJV Regard not them that have familiar spirits, neither seek after wizards, to be defiled by them: I *am* the LORD your God.

Deuteronomy 18:9–12 KJV

Deut. 18:9 ¶ When thou art come into the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee, thou shalt not learn to do after the abominations of those nations.

Deut. 18:10 There shall not be found among you *any one* that maketh his son or his daughter to pass through the fire, *or* that useth divination, *or* an observer of times, or an enchanter, or a witch,

Deut. 18:11 Or a charmer, or a consulter with familiar spirits, or a wizard, or a necromancer.

Deut. 18:12 For all that do these things *are* an abomination unto the LORD: and because of these abominations the LORD thy God doth drive them out from before thee.

SESSION 5 ENDS HERE

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

SESSION 6 STARTS HERE

John A. MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*

... the authority of the believer ... is the possession of every true child of God. ... Its reception dates from the soul’s contact with Calvary.²⁰

¹⁹ MacMillan, vii.

²⁰ MacMillan, 1.

There is a difference between “authority” (Greek: ἐξουσία = *exousia*) and “power” (Greek: δύναμις = *dunamis*).

**The following is from
CB Appendix 6
“The Synonymous Words for ‘Power’, etc.”
(Appendix 172 from *The Companion Bible*)**

1. *dunamis* = inherent power; the power of reproducing itself: from which we have English dynamics, dynamo, etc. See Acts 1:8.
2. *kratos* = strength (as exerted); power put forth with effect, and in government: from which we have the English theocracy, government by God: aristocracy, government by the best; democracy, government by the people. The Greek *enkrateia* = mastery over one's self = self-control, or having one's self reined in (from *krateia*, a rein). This (that is to say, *enkrateia*) is the only word rendered “temperance,” and occurs only in Acts 24:25. Galatians 5:23. 2 Peter 1:6, 6.
3. *ischus* = strength (as an endowment), physical strength possessed. See, for example, Mark 12:30.
4. *energeia* = energy; strength (No. 3 above) put forth from within in effectual operation. See, for example, 2 Thessalonians 2:9.
5. *exousia* = authority, or delegated power; the liberty and right to put forth power. See, for example, John 1: 12.
6. *archē* = beginning; then, the chief rule or ruler. See Luke 12: 11 (magistrates).

MacMillan discusses a traffic police officer to illustrate the difference between power (*dunamis*) and authority (*exousia*).

John A. MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*

What Authority Is

Authority ... is delegated power. Its value depends upon the force behind the user.²¹

The believer, who is fully conscious of divine Power behind him, and of his own authority thereby, can face the enemy without fear or hesitation. ... behind the ‘authority’ possessed by the believer, there is a “Power” infinitely greater than that which backs his enemies, and which they are compelled to recognize.²²

1 John 4:1 KJV ¶ Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

²¹ MacMillan, 4.

²² MacMillan, 5.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

1 John 4:4 KJV ¶ Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome **them**: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world.

“*them*”

The “them” in verse 4 refers back to “every spirit” in verse 1.

The Prayer Continues ...

For Spiritual Understanding of Resurrection Power to Usward Who Believe

Ephesians 1:17–2:1

Eph. 1:17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him:

Eph. 1:18 The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints,

Eph. 1:19 And what *is* the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power.

Eph. 1:20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set *him* at his own right hand in the heavenly *places*,

Eph. 1:21 Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world [age], but also in that which is to come:

Eph. 1:22 And hath put all *things* under his feet, and gave him *to be* the head over all *things* to the church,

Eph. 1:23 Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

Eph. 2:1 ¶ And you *hath he quickened*, who were dead in trespasses and sins;

Ephesians 1:19–2:1 NASB 1995

Eph. 1:19 and what is the surpassing greatness of His [God’s] power [*dunameos*] toward us who believe. ... in accordance with the working [*energeian*] of the strength [*kratous*] of His might [*ischuos*].

Eph. 1:20 which He brought about in Christ, when He raised Him from the dead and seated Him at His right hand in the heavenly *places*,

Eph. 1:21 far above all rule and authority and power and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this age but also in the one to come.

John MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*

The Source of Authority

In this working there was such a putting forth of the divine omnipotence that the Holy Spirit, through the apostle, requires four words of special significance to bring out the thought. ... their combination signifies that **behind the fact of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus there lay the mightiest working recorded in the Word of God** (emphasis added).

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Brim Note: Greater than Creation.

Romans 8:2 KJV For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death.

Having been thus raised from among the dead, Christ Jesus was exalted by God to His own right hand in the heavenlies. Then was seen the reason of such mighty working. The resurrection had been opposed by the tremendous “*powers of the air*”:—“all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named ...” (Ephesians 1:21). The evil forces of the “age to come” had been arrayed against the purpose of God. They had, however, been baffled and overthrown, and the risen Lord had been enthroned ‘far above’ them, ruling with the authority of the Most High.”²³

The Conferring of Authority

... “*to usward* who believe.” All the demonstration of the glory of God, shown in the manifestation of His omnipotence, pointed manward. The cross of Christ, with what it revealed of obedience to God, of atonement for sin, of crushing defeat of the foes of divine authority, shows us a representative Man overcoming for mankind and preparing, through His own incumbency, **a throne and a heavenly ministry** for those who should overcome through Him [emphasis added].

Observe ... **the identification of Christ’s people with Himself** in this crisis of the resurrection. In the first verse of chapter 2, the words read literally, ‘And you, *being dead* in trespasses and sins. ... we have left out the [phrase] verb ‘hath He quickened’ which appears in our Bibles. ... The Holy Spirit so arranged the structure of the whole passage that the fact might be emphasized that **Christ and His people were raised together** [emphasis added].

Where, then, do we find the verb that controls this passage? It will be seen in verses 19 and 20 of chapter 1: “According to that working of the strength of His might *when He raised HIM from the dead ...*” ... “... *and YOU when ye were dead.*” The same verb which expresses the reviving of Christ expresses also the reviving of His people.

... the very act of God which raised the Lord from among the dead, raised also His body. Head and body are naturally raised together: Christ, the Head; His body, the Church [*ho ekklesia*, the assembly of believers in Him].

Ephesians lifts the believer with the ascended Christ to the heavenlies where he is made a partaker of Christ’s throne.²⁴

The Location of Authority

That there may be no misunderstanding of the Holy Spirit’s meaning in this presentation of the truth of the elevation of the Lord’s people with their Head, He gives it a second time in Ephesians 2:4–6.

They are made to sit with Christ “in the heavenlies.” Christ’s seat is at the right hand of God. His people, therefore, occupy “with Him” the same august position.

²³ MacMillan, 6.

²⁴ MacMillan, 6-8.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

This honor is not to a chosen few, but is the portion of all those who share the Resurrection of the Son of God. It is the birthright of every true believer, of every born-again child of God.²⁵

Matthew 28:18 ESV And Jesus came and said to them, “**All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me.**”

His formal assumption of that authority took place when He sat down “on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens” (Hebrews 8:1).

The right hand of the throne of God is the center of power of the whole universe and the exercising of the power of the throne was committed unto the ascended Lord.

Brim Note: MacMillan died in 1954, and it was not widely known then that there are multiple universes. Therefore, the right hand of the throne of God is the center of power of the whole of Creation.

The elevation of His people with Him to the heavenlies has no other meaning than that they are made sharers, potentially for the present, of the authority which is His. They are made to sit with Him; that is, they share His throne.

To share a throne means without question to partake of the authority which it represents. Indeed, they have been thus elevated in the plan of God, for this very purpose that they may even now exercise, to the extent of their spiritual apprehension, authority over the powers of the air and over the conditions which those powers have brought about on the earth and are still creating through their ceaseless manipulations of the minds and circumstances of mankind.”²⁶

The Rebel Holders of This Authority

It is necessary to state here what is commonly understood by those who carefully study the Word, that the kingdoms of this world are under the control and leadership of satanic principalities.²⁷

Kenneth E. Hagin, *The Triumphant Church*

Satan Took Possession of Man's Lost Dominion

In the beginning Adam had the dominion over this world, and in that sense, Adam was made the “god” of this world. But when Adam and Eve ate of the forbidden fruit, their eyes were opened and they knew good and evil (Gen. 3:6,7). God had told Adam and Eve that in the day they ate of the fruit, they would die. Adam and Eve didn't die physically; they died spiritually. When they died spiritually, they were cut off or separated from God. By that act of disobedience, Adam forfeited his dominion on this earth to the devil.

The Bible substantiates the fact that Adam sold out his dominion to Satan through disobedience, and allowed Satan to become the god of this world.²⁸

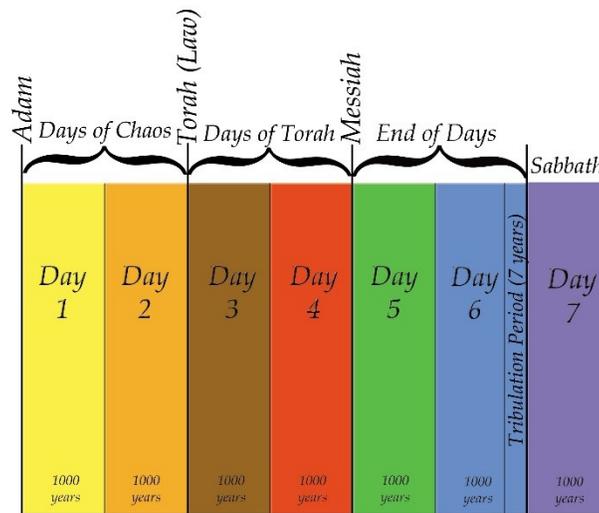
²⁵ MacMillan, 7-8.

²⁶ MacMillan, 9.

²⁷ MacMillan, 9-10.

²⁸ Kenneth E. Hagin, *The Triumphant Church* (Tulsa: Rhema Bible Church, 1993), 8.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER



Brim Note: Adam was given a six-day workweek on the earth (a thousand years is as a day). Like God, he would work with earth six days and then would be the seventh day of rest. Adam turned his dominion over to Satan. Adam had the legal right, but not the moral right, to do this. God honors the legality of Adam's lease. There is a fixed date for its termination. When that date comes, "the day of the Lord" begins. The day in which He exercises total dominion in all things.

Emphasis added to the following passages:

John 12:31 ASV Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the **prince of this world** be cast out.

John 14:30 KJV Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the **prince of this world** cometh, and hath nothing in me.

John 16:11 KJV Of judgment, because the **prince of this world** is judged.

2 Corinthians 4:4 KJV In whom the **god of this world** hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.

Ephesians 2:2 KJV Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to **the prince of the power** [Greek: *exousia*] **of the air**, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience:

"His [Satan's] asserted claim to the suzerainty²⁹ of the world kingdoms, made in the presence of the Lord Jesus ... was not denied by Christ."³⁰

Luke 4:5–8 KJV

Luke 4:5 And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time.

²⁹ Suzerainty—the dominion of a superior feudal lord to whom loyalty is due: overlordship

³⁰ MacMillan, 10.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Luke 4:6 And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me [by Adam]; and to whomsoever I will I give it.

Luke 4:7 If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine.

Luke 4:8 And Jesus answered and said unto him, **Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.**

Although a rebel against the Most High and now under judgment of dispossession (John 12:31), he is still at large, and as the masses of mankind are also rebels, he maintains over them an unquestioned, because unsuspected, rule, their eyes being blinded to his dominance (2 Corinthians 4:4).³¹

The seats of authority of these rebellious spiritual rulers are also in the heavenlies. From there they have dominated the human race since its fall. There they will remain until the divine “purpose of the ages” is complete.³²

Paul said he was “caught up” to the third heaven. We don’t know how many heavens there are, but we know there are at least three.

1. First Heaven: The atmospheric heavens around the Earth.
2. Second Heaven: Probably what we would call outer space.
3. Third Heaven: Where God’s throne is.

In God’s timing, there will be a new Heaven and a new Earth. God will change the heavens around Earth that have been defiled. Until then, Satan operates as the “prince of the power of the air.” From there, he harasses mankind.

Demonic spirits will try to get a foothold in a person.

- **Oppression.** They will attempt, from the outside, to penetrate our thoughts. This is where we have the option to reject those random thoughts by “bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ” (2 Corinthians 10:5).
- **Obsession.** If we don’t reject what the enemy throws at our minds, we can begin to obsess over it. If we are not careful, it can control our thinking.
- **Possession.** A Christian can’t be possessed.

We are “far above” the demonic realm. The demons must submit to our authority. Live in a place with the Holy Spirit so He can warn you.

Romans 5:17 KJV For if by one man’s offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.

SESSION 6 ENDS HERE

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

³¹ MacMillan, 10.

³² MacMillan, 12.

EPHESIANS

SESSION 7

Walking Out New Testament Realities: Part 1

SESSION 7 STARTS HERE

Walking It Out

Ephesians 3:19–21 KJV

Eph. 3:19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.

Eph. 3:20 Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us,

Eph. 3:21 Unto him *be* glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

I. Ephesians 3:19

- A. To know the love of the Mashiach (Messiah)—the Anointed One
- B. In order to be filled with
 - 1. KJV—all the fullness of God
 - 2. AMPC—the richest divine measure ... of God Himself

II. Ephesians 3:20

- A. The power that worketh in us
- B. Ephesians 3:16—strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man
- C. The Holy Spirit works His power in our inner man
 - 1. He stretches our capacity to receive the richer divine measure of God himself
 - 2. God lives His life through us
 - 3. We cease from our own works

III. Ephesians 3:21—Unto Him be the glory in the Church

Ephesians 4:1–15 KJV

Eph. 4:1 ¶ I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called,

Eph. 4:2 ¶ With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love;

Eph. 4:3 Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

Eph. 4:4 *There is* one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling;

Eph. 4:5 One Lord, one faith, one baptism,

Eph. 4:6 One God and Father of all, who *is* above all, and through all, and in you all.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Eph. 4:7 But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

Eph. 4:8 Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

Eph. 4:9 (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

Eph. 4:10 He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.)

Eph. 4:11 And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers;

Eph. 4:12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

Eph. 4:13 Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ:

Eph. 4:14 That we *henceforth* be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, *and* cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;

Eph. 4:15 But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, *even* Christ:

IV. **Ephesians 4:1**—walk worthy of your calling

V. **Ephesians 4:2**

A. With lowliness and meekness

B. With l-o-n-g-s-u-f-f-e-r-i-n-g

C. With forbearance

1. One another

2. This means members of the Church

4. Pastors have a grace that assists in forbearance

5. The prayer in Ephesians 1 can help

a. “That we might know His glorious inheritance in the saints”

b. It helps to see past the flesh and see the treasure inside of a person

c. Forbearing in love

VI. **Ephesians 4:11–12**—the Gifts of Ministry

A. There’s no “and” between “pastors” and “teachers”

B. If you’re a pastor, it’s great to also be a teacher

C. If you’re a teacher, it’s nice to also be a pastor

D. They’re given (verse 12) “For the perfecting of the saints” or the “maturing” of the saints

VII. **Ephesians 4:13**

A. The end result will be a “perfect man”

1. Complete

2. Mature

3. Whole

B. Until we get to the same measure as the Anointed One and His anointing

- VIII. Ephesians 4:14**—no more children
- A. Not tossed to and fro
 - B. Not blown around or deceived
- IX. Ephesians 4:15**
- A. Speaking the truth
 - B. Letting love be the boundary for what you say
 - C. Growing up as a result

Growing Up

2 Corinthians 5:17–18 KJV

2 Cor. 5:17 Therefore if any man *be* in Christ, *he is* a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.

2 Cor. 5:18 And all things *are* of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation;

- I. 2 Corinthians 5:17**
- A. The one in Christ is a new creature
 - B. It's the inward man of the heart that is new
 1. It's not our earth suit (body) that is new
 2. A bald-headed person is still bald after salvation
 3. This person is brand new
 4. This person is of God and therefore not defective
- 1 Peter 2:2 KJV** As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:
- II. 1 Peter 2:2**
- A. Babies wake their parents for 2:00 feedings because of a strong desire
 1. They don't desire money
 2. They don't desire toys
 3. They don't desire entertainment
 4. They desire milk
 - B. New creatures should desire the milk of the Word in this way
 - C. The result of desiring and drinking the milk of the Word is growth
- III. Sometimes growing up requires a gardener**
- A. God is our gardener (“husbandman”)
 - B. He has to inspect our leaves
 - C. He has to inspect our growth
 - D. He has to inspect for bugs
 - E. He has to check to see if any branches need removal
 - F. Removal might hurt, but Hebrews [12:6] says he corrects those He loves
- IV. Locating ourselves**
- A. Shelli's experience locating herself concerning her blood type
 - B. Ephesians 4:15—let us grow up in every way
 - C. As we do verse 15, we will no longer be children, as it says in verse 14

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Matthew 5:43–48 KJV

Matt. 5:43 ¶ Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy.

Matt. 5:44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you;

Matt. 5:45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.

Matt. 5:46 For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same?

Matt. 5:47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more *than others*? do not even the publicans so?

Matt. 5:48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

V. **Matthew 5:43–48**—Be ye therefore perfect

- A. Jesus is speaking to the Jews here
- B. These are the principles of grace and the laws of the kingdom to the Jews in perfecting and maturing
- C. Jesus likens loving and blessing your enemy to being perfected or maturing

Romans 12:1–2, 18–21 KJV

Rom. 12:1 ¶ I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, *which is* your reasonable service

Rom. 12:2 And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what *is* that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God

Rom. 12:18 If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men

Rom. 12:19 Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but *rather* give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance *is* mine; I will repay, saith the Lord

Rom. 12:20 Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head

Rom. 12:21 Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good

VI. **Romans 12:1**

- A. This is written to “brethren”—the Body of Christ
- B. We present our bodies—not the Holy Spirit
- C. Our bodies are a “living sacrifice”
- D. Holy unto God means separated to Him
- E. Doing this is our “reasonable service”
 1. This word “service” is the same word used to describe the performing of duties in the Holy Temple by the priests in the Old Testament
 2. This word also means “worship” [Hebrews 9:6 AMPC and NASB]

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

3. Presenting your body to the Lord as a living sacrifice is an act of worship

VII. Romans 12:2

- A. Be not conformed to this world: be transformed by the renewal of your mind
- B. Spirit, soul, and body are represented in verses one and two
 1. The spirit presents your body for sacrifice
 2. Your mind is being renewed

VIII. Romans 12:18–21

- A. These verses tell you how to present your body and renew your mind
- B. This passage is also written to the Body of Christ
 1. We're seated far above the enemy
 2. We don't wrestle against flesh and blood
 3. It takes mind renewal to walk out this passage
- C. When you renew your mind, as in verse 2, you can give food and drink to your enemy when he hungers and thirsts, as in verse 20

A Parenthesis

I. "Don't Let Me Be Boring"

- A. Shelli went with her family on a ministry tour through Minnesota in the early 90s
 1. The four of them (Shelli, her husband, Bob, her daughter, Kylie, and her five-year-old son, Cody) were all on the road together
 2. They went from church to church for 30 days
 3. Shelli was the preacher in the family (Bob did not preach at the time)
 4. Shelli only had three messages that she felt confident to preach
 5. At the end of the 30 days, the whole family had heard the three messages several times
- B. In one of the last days of the tour, Shelli told the people to turn to Psalm 145
 1. Cody recognized the passage and wasn't happy
 2. He began to make a "cut" motion across his throat
 3. He very softly whispered, "I've heard this before. It's boring!"
 4. This was very uncharacteristic of this usually respectful boy
 5. Then he softly whispered, "God is bored with it, too!"
- C. You may have ministered a message and felt like the Lord was bored, too
 1. Help us to be led by Your Spirit, Lord
 2. Help us to bring exactly what the congregation needs
- D. The usher that was sitting in the seat next to Cody began to laugh
- E. He had a breakthrough because other members of the church knew him as a man who "never laughs"

II. (A second parenthesis)—Trouble on the Face

- A. Shelli's family took her granddaughter to the zoo when she was four
- B. It was a hot day and they had been there all day

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- C. A gorilla in his exhibit has also had a long, hot day
- D. Four-year-old Isley was broken-hearted over the gorilla's sad face
- E. That night at home, Isley climbed onto the fireplace hearth and began to worship the Lord
 - 1. She sang, "I saw a monkey. He had trouble on the face."
 - 2. Continuing, she sang, "Our God is able to get trouble off the face!"
 - 3. The simple worship of the child affected Shelli's life
- F. One of the greatest commodities that the Body of Christ has is the fullness of joy that is found in His presence
 - 1. It will be seen on people's faces
 - 2. It will be the biggest evangelistic tool out in the world

Growing Up Spiritually

(using the book by Kenneth E. Hagin, *Growing Up, Spiritually*³³)

- I. **There are three stages of spiritual growth, in the same way that there are three stages in natural growth**
 - A. The babyhood stage (no one is born a mature Christian)
 - B. The childhood stage
 - C. The manhood stage
- II. **Stage One: Babyhood**
 - A. The Scripture 1 Peter 2:2, "As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby," shows us that we are born spiritual babies
 - B. Babies need to be:
 - 1. Seen about
 - 2. Followed up
 - 3. Prayed with
 - 4. Talked to
 - 5. Dealt with as newborns
 - C. They can't do much for themselves
 - D. We are responsible for the spiritual babies in our churches and in our circles
 - E. None of us could imagine taking a baby home and never:
 - 1. Feeding it
 - 2. Changing its diaper
 - 3. Holding it
 - 4. Handling it
 - F. Innocence is a noticeable characteristic of a baby
 - 1. They have no past: no guilt, no shame
 - 2. Spiritual babies also have innocence
 - a. We can and should never lose that innocence
 - b. His mercy is new every morning
 - c. 1 John 1:9 is to the Body of Christ

³³ Kenneth E. Hagin, *Growing Up, Spiritually* (Tulsa, OK: Rhema Bible Church, 1976).

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- i. Says that the Lord is faithful to cleanse us from all unrighteousness
 - ii. That's innocence: like we've never sinned
- 3. We don't have a right to bring up others' past failures
- 4. We don't have a right to hold onto our own past failures
- 5. If we asked the Lord to forgive us, we know He has
- 6. We should maintain our innocence so that we will not "fall into the condemnation of the devil" [1 Timothy 3:6]
 - a. The devil's accusations are fiery darts
 - b. We're washed in the blood
 - c. We can move on
- G. Babies are full of faith
 - 1. Faith that they'll be fed
 - 2. Faith that they're going to wake up in the morning and everything is going to be alright
- H. Big babies—don't have a teachable spirit
- I. Babies think that they should put everything in their mouths
 - 1. Screws, balloons, all kinds of things go into the mouths of natural babies
 - 2. Spiritual babies will put all kinds of doctrines into their spiritual "mouths"
 - 3. They are likely to buy books at a Christian bookstore without discretion
 - a. Some books contain poison
 - b. In the same way as poisoning an animal, the spiritual poison is wrapped with Scripture
 - c. The babies are likely to swallow it
 - 4. Br. Hagin knew a minister with a Doctor of Theology degree
 - a. He had an immense library of books
 - b. He told Br. Hagin that there were some books he wished he hadn't read
 - c. He said they were full of poison
 - d. He said his faith was affected even at that time
 - 5. So we need to be careful not to swallow every doctrine that we hear
 - a. One big example of doctrine to reject is replacement theology
 - b. The Church did not replace the Jews
 - c. We need to be careful what we read and feed on because that's what we become
- J. Babies can be irritable
- K. Babies are easily spoiled

Genesis 21:8 KJV And the child grew, and was weaned: and Abraham made a great feast the same day that Isaac was weaned.

L. Genesis 21:8

- 1. Isaac "grew and was weaned," just like we are to grow
- 2. "Abraham "made a great feast"; this shows we need to celebrate being weaned

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Psalm 131:2 KJV Surely I have behaved and quieted myself, as a child that is weaned of his mother: my soul is even as a weaned child.

M. Psalm 131:2

1. He did the quieting himself (as opposed to someone doing it for him)
 2. There's an assurance and a calmness to reaching the weaned stage
 3. Growing to this stage is the plan and purpose of God
- N. Some babies don't want to feast when they're weaned; they want to cry
- O. These babies want to continue getting special attention
1. In the last church that Br. Hagin pastored, there were two ladies that lived next door to each other
 2. They were saved and filled with the Holy Spirit
 3. Despite this, they were the biggest babies in the world
 - a. They constantly wanted special attention
 - b. They would miss church on Sunday just to get Br. Hagin to visit them
 4. (The Lord may be talking to some pastors listening to this class)
 5. Br. Hagin decided to just quit visiting these ladies
 - a. One of the deacons said something to Br. Hagin about the situation
 - b. Br. Hagin responded that the deacon could go visit them if he wanted, but he (Br. Hagin) was categorically not going
 - c. Br. Hagin said these women were babies that wanted to stay babies
 - i. It was a waste of his time to visit them
 - ii. Their lack of teachableness made it impossible to help them
 6. After the ladies realized that Br. Hagin wasn't going to come visit them, they became more faithful to church than they had ever been
- P. We should have enough spiritual growth that we can go help people instead of requiring others to come to us
- Q. A properly weaned child won't continue to want the bottle
- R. First Peter 2:2 tells us that people who are receiving milk will grow, "As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby"
- S. Some pastors have told me to "feed" their people only a little "milk" since that's all they had ever been fed
1. If they had really been receiving milk, they would have grown
 2. They were apparently only receiving "bluejohn"—skim milk
- T. The Lord wants to bring us out of the place of being easily frustrated, distracted, and hurt
- U. Drinking from the new wine of the Holy Ghost is one way to keep from being hurt
- V. We're keeping our eyes on Jesus and moving out of babyhood and into childhood

SESSION 7 ENDS HERE [RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

EPHESIANS

SESSION 8

Walking Out New Testament Realities: Part 2

SESSION 8 STARTS HERE

Ephesians 4:12–16 KJV

Eph. 4:12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

Eph. 4:13 Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ:

Eph. 4:14 That we *henceforth* be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, *and* cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;

Eph. 4:15 But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, *even* Christ:

Eph. 4:16 From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

I. Ephesians 4:12

- A. For the perfecting of the saints means their maturing
- B. For the work of the ministry
- C. For the edifying of the Body of Christ

II. Ephesians 4:13

- A. Until we all come into the unity of the faith (not the unity of doctrine)
- B. Until we all come into the knowledge of the Son of God
- C. Unto a perfect or mature man
- D. Unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ

III. Ephesians 4:14

- A. That we don't continue to be children
 1. God wants us to grow up
 2. The church at Ephesus had some growing to do
- B. Tossed to and fro (like children)
- C. By every wind of doctrine
 1. Not even necessarily false doctrine
 2. We can get out of balance with the winds of doctrine
 3. We need to stay in the middle of the road
 4. Some cunning and crafty men lie in wait to deceive

IV. **Ephesians 4:15**

- A. We are to speak the truth in love
- B. We are to grow up into Christ, the Head, in all things

V. **Ephesians 4:16**

- A. The whole body is joined together by that which every joint supplies
- B. It's according to the effectual working of every part
 - 1. Every person in the class is a part of the Body of Christ
 - 2. Each one has an effectual working in them
 - 3. We need the supply of every single one
- C. These things make the Body increase until it is edified in love

Growing Up Spiritually

(using the book by Kenneth E. Hagin, *Growing Up, Spiritually*³⁴)

I. **Review of the Babyhood Stage****Hebrews 6:1–3 KJV**

Heb. 6:1 ¶ Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God,

Heb. 6:2 Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment.

Heb. 6:3 And this will we do, if God permit.

- A. What is the milk of God's Word? (Hebrews 6:1)
 - 1. It's good to review the milk of God's Word
 - a. Just because you're no longer a baby doesn't mean you wouldn't enjoy a glass of milk sometimes
 - b. We're to leave the principles of the doctrines of Christ
 - i. It doesn't mean never referring to them again
 - ii. We progress forward, onward, and upward
 - iii. We don't continue to lay the same foundation
 - iv. We go on to maturity
 - c. The milk is the foundation
- B. Repentance from dead works
- C. Faith toward God
- D. The doctrine of baptisms
 - 1. The Baptism into the Body of Christ by the Holy Spirit when you're born again
 - 2. Water baptism
 - 3. Jesus baptizes us in the Holy Spirit
- E. The laying on of hands

³⁴ Kenneth E. Hagin, *Growing Up, Spiritually* (Tulsa, OK: Rhema Bible Church, 1976).

F. Resurrection of the dead

G. Eternal judgment

II. The Childhood Stage (the second stage)

Eph. 4:14 That we *henceforth* be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, *and* cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;

Luke 6:46–49 KJV

Luke 6:46 And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

Luke 6:47 Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like:

Luke 6:48 He is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock.

Luke 6:49 But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth; against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell; and the ruin of that house was great.

III. Luke 6:46–49

A. Why do you call Me Lord and don't obey Me?

B. Whoever hears My sayings and does them

1. It's one thing to be in a church service and say, "Hallelujah" because you've heard a good message
2. It's another thing to do what you heard at home

C. Jesus gave a simile of a person who hears and does the Word

1. He is like a man who dug deep in the rock to lay the foundation of his house
2. When the vehement floods came, the house could not be shaken
3. The house was founded on the rock

D. Jesus also gave a simile of a person hears and does not do the Word

1. He is like a man who built a house, without a foundation, directly on the dirt
2. When the vehement floods came, it fell immediately
3. The house was greatly damaged

Matthew 7:24–27 KJV

Matt. 7:24 Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock:

Matt. 7:25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock.

Matt. 7:26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand:

Matt. 7:27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- A. **Matthew 7:24–27**
- B. “... a wise man which built ...”: the Hebrew word “build”
 - 1. It’s from the same group of words that includes son (singular and plural) and daughters (plural)
 - 2. To build a household of faith, you need sons and daughters
- C. Jesus told us that he compares the man who listens to and obeys His sayings to a wise man who built his house on the rock
- D. “And the rain descended ...”
 - 1. Rain is pressure from above
 - 2. Floods are pressure from the bottom
 - 3. Winds are pressure from the sides
 - 4. These are all outside pressures
- E. The Lord wants our house to be unaffected by all of this
- F. He wants our home to be a slice of heaven on earth
- G. The storm came on both houses
- H. **Matthew 7:25**
 - 1. Rains, floods and winds came and beat the house vehemently
 - 2. The house of the doer of His sayings didn’t fall
- I. **Matthew 7:26—27**
 - 1. The house of the one who was not a doer faced the same storms
 - 2. His house fell
- J. The only difference between the two men and their two houses was that one was a doer, and the other was not
 - 1. One practiced of the Word, and the other didn’t
 - 2. One acted like the Word was true, and the other didn’t
- K. Storms come to us all; the secret to success is being a doer of the Word

A Personal Story

- IV. **A personal story about Shelli being a doer of God’s command to her**
 - A. She had been traveling and teaching and taking her children with her
 - B. The Lord laid on her heart to stop traveling for a time
 - C. She became a stay-at-home mom for a season
 - 1. There is a particular fruit for each season
 - 2. A stay-at-home mom with a call of God on her life shouldn’t feel frustrated
 - 3. One of the greatest, most eternal things you can do is train up your children
 - D. When she started ministering again, Shelli taught about “Heaven in the Home”
 - 1. She and her family had experienced it
 - 2. She wasn’t a hypocrite; she was a doer of the Word

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

3. It was a delight to her to share these truths with the Body of Christ
 - E. Shelli received a phone call and a request from her youngest brother, Chip
 1. (Shelli asks for and receives testimony from the 3BI students that attend the church of which Chip is now pastor—a good pastor)
 2. Chip requested that Shelli allow him to travel with her and minister in the churches in which she was ministering
 - F. She told Chip he could join her, and they went to a Native American church in Canada
 1. Chip was asked to preach on the first night of the meetings
 2. He was going to preach one of his two sermons: rejoicing is the “play” that takes a person over the “goal line” of victory in Christian life
 3. The Native Americans at this church were not particularly time-conscious and it looked like no one would be attending the service
 4. Chip had to resist the temptation to be anxious about provision
 5. People started showing up and filled the church and they had a wonderful service
 6. People started rejoicing and “crossing over the goal line”—receiving the manifestation of their prayer
 - G. At the next service, Shelli was responsible for preaching
 1. The message that Shelli was anointed to preach was “Heaven in the Home”
 - a. Two subjects are most likely to result in quiet congregations—money and children
 - b. Shelli’s “Heaven in the Home” message dealt with children
 - c. Listeners were often quiet while hearing Shelli minister
 2. Shelli was disappointed at quiet responses
 3. She wanted to see the joyful exuberance that Chip’s message received
 - a. Shelli was responding from a “babyhood stage” point of view
 - b. It’s possible to operate from the babyhood stage in one area and from other stages in other areas
 - H. Late one night, Shelli returned home from ministering on “Heaven in the Home”
 1. She was physically exhausted
 2. She was tired of teaching on “Heaven in the Home”
 3. She told the Lord she was going to teach on another subject
 - a. There were plenty of tapes on the subject
 - b. There are a lot of other subjects out there
 4. She decided to teach on joy
 - I. Shelli fell asleep, and the Lord gave her a vision of Heaven
 1. She found herself on a mountaintop looking down on fertile agricultural fields
-

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- a. She was surprised to find farms in Heaven
- b. A voice asked her, “Where did you think the heavenly bread came from?”
- c. She thought the Iowa farmers that went to Heaven would be thrilled with such fields
2. She was enjoying her surroundings and a bit of alone time when she felt a presence
 - a. There was much love in the presence she felt, so she thought perhaps it was John the Beloved
 - b. When she opened her eyes, it was Jesus
- J. Jesus told her He was going to teach her about “Heaven in the Home”
 1. She had a knowing that He had heard the conversation that had transpired in her heart about giving up on that subject
 2. He knew the thoughts of her heart because He is the Great Shepherd and was watching over her
 3. He repeated that He was going to teach her about “Heaven in the Home” and smiled a big smile
 - a. He has a great personality
 - b. He’s not stiff or religious
 - c. He made her laugh
 - d. He’s a coach
 - e. He speaks the truth in love
 - f. He’s coming soon
 - g. He wants to be the God of glory that manifests in our home
- V. **The Childhood Stage—the second stage** (continued)
 - A. There are three stages in physical growth and in spiritual growth
 1. Babyhood
 2. Childhood
 3. Adulthood
 - B. In the childhood stage, people are easily distracted
 - C. They are not dependable
 1. They are unreliable
 2. They are impressionable
 3. They are unsteady
 - D. They often put their noses where they don’t belong due to their curiosity
 1. The Scripture tells us to learn “to be quiet, and” tend to “your own business” (1 Thessalonians 4:11)
 2. Asking a personal question about a private matter is an example of the childhood stage
 - E. In childhood, an individual hasn’t learned the value of when to be quiet
 1. Talkativeness is an indication of childhood

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

2. **Proverbs 10:19 KJV** In the multitude of words there wanteth not sin: but he that refraineth his lips is wise.
- F. It's not possible to skip stages and go from babyhood to maturity overnight
- G. Other translations of Proverbs 10:19
 1. **AMPC**—In a multitude of words transgression is not lacking, but he who restrains his lips is prudent.
 2. **ESV**—When words are many, transgression is not lacking, but whoever restrains his lips is prudent.
 3. **PASSION**—If you keep talking, it won't be long before you're saying something really wrong.
 4. **Jewish Publication Society**—Where there is much talking, there is no lack of transgressing. He who curbs his tongue shows sense.
 5. **NLT**—Too much talk leads to sin. Be sensible and keep your mouth shut.
- H. **Ecclesiastes 5:3** "... a fool's voice is known by multitude of words."
 1. **NIV**—A dream comes when there are many cares, and many words mark the speech of a fool.
 2. **NKJV**—For a dream comes through much activity, And a fool's voice *is known* [for too] many words.
 3. The Lord is teaching us to value our words

Acts 13:1–2 KJV

Acts 13:1 ¶ Now there were in the church that was at Antioch certain prophets and teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul.

Acts 13:2 As they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the Holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them.

- I. Acts 13:2
 1. "And the Holy Ghost said ..."
 2. Singing lyrics such as "How Great Thou Art" minister to the Lord
 3. We can even do this at home
 - a. Churches are made up of families
 - b. Families that minister to the Lord at home bring a strong supply to their church
 - J. Those in the childhood stage participate in foolish speaking
 1. This is something that hinders spiritual growth
 2. We can't grow spiritually and talk only about natural things
- VI. **The Manhood Stage (the third stage)**

Hebrews 11:24–26 KJV

Heb. 11:24 By faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter;

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Heb. 11:25 Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season;

Heb. 11:26 Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompence of the reward.

A. Hebrews 11:24–26

1. Egypt is a type of the world
2. Moses was the son of Pharaoh's daughter
 - a. Honor, wealth, and prestige were his
 - b. He valued the "reproach of Christ" of greater riches

B. "Following God's Plan for Your Life" (Kenneth Hagin)

1. God wants us to be teachable
2. The word "submit" means to give in to one another

C. Being filled with the Spirit makes naturally difficult things much easier

1. Having a fervent spirit makes it easier to keep the flesh under its dominion
2. God's will for our life is for our inner man (spirit) to get victory over the flesh

D. Romans 12:1 KJV I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

1. You, in your inward man, present your body as a sacrifice to the Lord
2. As we keep our flesh under subjection to our spirit, God's will becomes more and more clear

E. We should submit to one another and the Word of God

1. Some believers leave a church because of offense at the Word preached
2. We need to maintain a teachable spirit
3. Without humility or a teachable spirit, we can be hindered from fulfilling the plan of God for our life

F. "To walk in places of greatness, there is a place of getting lower and lower and lower with God in humility"—Heidi Baker

G. "Put on soft moccasins of humility"—Brenda Brim Krukow

1. Come into the throne room with confidence because of the blood
2. You have an invitation and boldness
3. Humility is also a necessity

H. Maintaining humility and a teachable spirit will keep us

1. Those enrolled in 3BI are teachable and hungry
2. We can walk in love even when we disagree

I. We maintain a strong spiritual life by close fellowship with God through prayer

J. We will not fulfill the entire plan of God for our life all at once

1. Walking out God's plan is a step-by-step journey

EPHESIANS: WALKING OUT NEW TESTAMENT REALITIES—PART 2
THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

2. We commit to be faithful to walk in the light of what we know
 3. We remain cognizant of doing everything to His glory
- K. As we do these things, He helps us to be in the right place and time
1. As we take a right step, He unfolds the next step
 2. We let the Spirit lead us

SESSION 8 ENDS HERE

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

EPHESIANS

CHAPTER 2:5-6

How To Use the Authority of the Believer

SESSION 9 STARTS HERE

Introduction

The authority of the believer is not over people; it is over demons.

The following is excerpted from
Kenneth E. Hagin, Prayer Seminar April 28, 1983
“Word of Wisdom: Word of Knowledge of What the Holy Ghost Is Saying”

In this move of God that is just about to spring upon you, there will be a manifestation of casting out demons that you haven't seen yet.

Now some have drawn back from casting out demons. And the Spirit of God said, "I began a move along that line a few years ago and men aborted the move; they mixed some of their own thinking in on it, and they tried to control it, and do it according to pattern and according to this way that we think it ought to be done."

But you haven't seen anything yet of what you're going to see in dealing with demons. For demons are let loose upon the earth; they're going about as never before because they know their time is short!

And so, in this multiplication—this advance of demon activity—there will be the activity of the Holy Ghost. Demons that have harassed men, demons that have held ministries in check will leave.

And you have not seen yet what you will see in the area of dealing with demons, casting out demons, exercising authority over demons. And we're about to step into it like you'd step through a door into another room.

Brother Hagin said the message he preached that received the most resistance was the message of “ruling and reigning.” People have resisted the notion that we could have anything to do with ruling and reigning. They seem to think that is at odds with the concept of the sovereignty of God.

Make no mistake. God is sovereign. But in His sovereignty, He gave authority and dominion over the Earth to Adam. Then Adam sold it out to the devil. Until Adam's lease runs out, the devil is here legally.

God, in His sovereignty, chose to make us with free will, with the ability to choose. We get to choose. We can't cop out and claim that every bad thing that happens to us is because God allowed it to happen. In His sovereignty, He lets you choose; He lets your will work.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

There is coming a day, called the Day of the Lord, after which everything is according to His will. Until then, we have been given the authority to rule and reign.

Ruling and Reigning

For years I have given MacMillan's book to people where facts glaringly reveal the devil is at work against them. I tell them to read the book and then "to do" Page 27.

John MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*

Do we believe that God "hath quickened us together with Christ and hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus" (Ephesians 2:5-6)?

If we do, our reaction to it will be a fervent, "Lord, I accept Thy gracious word. I believe that Thou hast thus wrought for me. In humble faith I do now take my seat in the heavenly places in Christ Jesus at Thy right hand. Teach me how to fulfill this sacred ministry, how to exercise the authority which Thou hast entrusted to me. Train me day by day that I may attain to the full stature of the perfect man in Christ, so that in me Thy purpose of the ages may be fulfilled. Amen.

If we are walking in the Spirit, our normal life is in the heavenlies. To secure the consciousness of this, there must be the daily acceptance of the fact. Let us, morning by morning, as one of our first acts of worship, take our seat with Christ (as suggested in the previous paragraph) and return thanks to God for all that it implies. Let us often remind ourselves that we are seated far above all the powers of the air, and that they are in subjection to us.³⁵

Brother Kenneth Hagin, for whom I worked ten years, advocated praying the two Holy Spirit-given prayers in Ephesians (1:17-23, 2:1-6 and 3:14-21) every day. So for years I'd prayed the two prayers fairly regularly. And from his book, *The Believer's Authority*, I knew I had authority over the devil.

I knew about the power of the blood and that I was to use the blood of the Lamb.

But it was not until about twenty years ago that I first learned about ruling and reigning every day, as MacMillan's page 27 brings to light. It was then that I began the powerful practice of sitting in my prayer chair every morning and exercising this authority.

My children were grown. If I'd known and practiced this every morning, the devil would not have been prowling around my daughter Brenda's bedroom every night.

Brother Hagin, when I went to talk to him about Brenda, told me that the devil always pursues children who are keen to the spirit realm. He wants to make them his mediums. He will make pictures move on the wall, etc.

³⁵ John A. MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*. (originally published as a series of articles, 1932; repr., Branson, MO: A Glorious Church Fellowship, 2015), 27.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

My good friend Jean Ann McNally called me and told me she'd found MacMillan's teaching, to which Brother Hagin had referred in a book. We purchased MacMillan's *Authority of the Believer*, and I immediately began to put page 27 into practice.

I bought many copies and gave them to as many people as I could. When they stopped publishing the book, our ministry bought the rights to publish it ourselves.

Since that time, I usually sit in my prayer chair in the morning and actively reign as a king in my life.

- ***I praise and thank the Father that He has delivered me out of the control of the kingdom of darkness and into the kingdom of the Light, the kingdom of His beloved son.***

Colossians 1:12-13 KJV

Col. 1:12 ¶ Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet [qualified us] to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light:

Col. 1:13 Who hath delivered us from the power [*exousia*] of darkness, and hath translated *us* into the kingdom of his dear Son:

- ***I thank the Father that He has commissioned me to rule and reign as a king in life.***

Romans 5:17 KJV For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life* by one, Jesus Christ.

| *Amplified Bible Classic Edition: "reign as kings in life."

- ***I pray the prayer in Ephesians 1:17-23; 2:4-6.***

God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of Glory: Please give unto me the spirit of wisdom and revelation, in the knowledge of Him.

Let the eyes of my understanding be enlightened, that I may know what is the hope of His calling, the riches of the glory of Your inheritance in the saints and the exceeding greatness of Your *dunamis* to us who believe, according to Your mighty power, which You wrought in the Messiah, the Anointed One, when you raised Him from the dead and set Him at your own right hand in the heavenlies, far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this age and world, but also in that which is to come.

And You have put all under His feet and have given Him to be the Head over all to the *ekklesia*, the Church, which is His Body, the fullness of Him that filleth all in all.

And me have you quickened, when I was dead, slain by my trespasses and sins ...

But You, God, who are rich in mercy, for Your great love wherewith You loved me, even when I was dead in sins, hath quickened me together with Christ, (by grace I am saved), and hath raised me up and made me sit in the heavenlies in Christ Jesus.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

When You quickened Him, You quickened me.

When You raised Him, You raised me.

When You seated Him, You seated me in Him.

Therefore, in Him I am seated far above all principality, power, might and dominion and every name that is named.

And in the Name of Jesus, I will now rule and reign over the powers of darkness, because the Lord told me to in Romans 5:17. For I have received abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness. Therefore, I now reign as a king in my life by One, Jesus Christ.

• ***Then I turn to the kingdom of darkness and say something like this:***

Kingdom of Darkness, Listen Up!

From Satan to the lowest imp.

In the Name of Jesus, and through the power of His shed blood ...

(And here I often use other forms of His Name)

I remind you that my Father has translated me out of the kingdom of darkness and into the kingdom of the light, the kingdom of His Beloved Son and you have no control or dominion over me.

I have been given dominion over you.

You are under my feet.

And my Father has commissioned me to rule and reign over you (Romans 5:17).

Therefore ...

And from here, I bind his operation in the heavenlies in every place of my dominion.

I bind him from operating in my life, in the lives of my family, in our *dereks* (paths), in the good works the Lord has ordained we should walk in ... I cover houses, vehicles, monies, assets ... I zone in on peoples and areas which seem to need special attention.

It is not just the knowing about and accepting the truth of the believer's authority. The effectiveness of it lies in the DOING OF IT.

I do it almost every morning from my prayer chair. For kings sit on thrones. Other members of the court stand in their presence. I remind God's enemy and mine that I am seated at the right hand of the Father in Jesus. And that I am seated here on earth wearing my earth suit, my body. I wear the full badge of authority over him from those two seats. (By the way, the word for both *seat* and *throne* is the same in the original languages of the Bible.)

Sometimes when I am traveling, I do it in the car or on an airplane.

I absolutely love and can testify to the experience of the following words of MacMillan:

John MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*

As our faith learns to use the Name and the Authority of Jesus, we shall find the spiritual forces yielding obedience in ways that will surprise us. As we continue to abide closely in Him, our prayers for the advancement of the kingdom will become less and less the uttering of petitions and will increasingly manifest the exercise of a spiritual authority that . . . binds the forces of darkness. . . .³⁶

The Lord told Kenneth E. Hagin:

“Not one single time in the New Testament is the Church ever told to pray that God the Father or Jesus would do anything against the devil. In fact, to do so is to waste your time. *The believer* is told to do something about the devil. The reason is because you have the authority to do it. The Church is not to pray to God the Father about the devil; the Church is to exercise the authority that belongs to it.

“ . . . The least member of the Body of Christ has just as much power over the devil as anyone else, and unless believers do something about the devil, nothing will be done in a lot of areas.”³⁷

For more on this, see *The Believer's Authority* by Kenneth E. Hagin, especially chapter five.

See also MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*, pages 43-44.

It Is Written

Mark 16:14-18 KJV

Mark 16:14 ¶ Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.

Mark 16:15 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.

Mark 16:16 He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.

Mark 16:17 And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues;

Mark 16:18 They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

Luke 10:19 NASB 1995 Behold, I have given you authority [*exousia*] to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power [*dunamis*] of the enemy, and nothing will injure you.

³⁶ MacMillan, 28.

³⁷ Kenneth E. Hagin, *The Believer's Authority* (Tulsa, OK: Rhema Bible Church, 1967,1986), 37.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Romans 5:17 KJV For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.

Ephesians 4:27 KJV Neither give place to the devil.

James 4:7 KJV Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you.

1 Peter 5:8-9 KJV

1 Pet. 5:8 ¶ Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour:

1 Pet. 5:9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith ...

1 John 4:1-4 KJV

1 John 4:1 ¶ Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

1 John 4:2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God:

1 John 4:3 And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that *spirit* of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.

1 John 4:4 ¶ Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world.

Revelation 12:10-11 KJV

Rev. 12:10 And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.

Rev. 12:11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.

| Satan is known as the accuser of the brethren. He is also known as the dragon.

Know It!

Hosea 4:6 KJV ¶ My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge ...

“Dominion,” Billye Brim Blog, March 5, 2021

... In 1981 I edited a book for Dr. Lester Sumrall entitled then *You Hold the Reins*.

I'd misplaced my copy and wanted to refer to the original edition for the upcoming class. I ordered it online and I had to pay \$74. Today I was reading it, and several things impacted me. Dr. Sumrall indeed knew how to take his dominion, his authority. The following quote I posted on Twitter:

“There never was a Goliath capable of standing before any of God's Davids.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

The devil cannot create an image of strength which God's people cannot destroy."

The Lord told Kenneth E. Hagin that whatever happened in America happened because the church allowed it to happen. In that light, consider the following from Dr. Sumrall:

"The most powerful living organism on the earth today is the Church—the very Body of Christ."

Dr. Sumrall told the following story to illustrate that without knowledge of the dominion and authority the believer received at the instant of his new birth, he cannot possess dominion over the many conflicts of life. (Hosea 4:6.)

"Suppose someone kidnaps a king's only son, the crown prince of the realm. Later, the child is abandoned. A beggar finds the boy, and having no idea of his identity, out of compassion adopts him. Now the child of the king eats beggar's refuse, clothes himself in filthy rags, and begs from house to house.

"But suppose further that the king knows the young prince by a birthmark which establishes his identity beyond question. The royal father never gives up in his search for the prince. One day the king hears that a child resembling his son lives in a distant city with a beggar. Arriving at the beggar's hovel, the king examines the child and finds him to be his son.

"A tremendous change suddenly takes place. The crown prince is washed and groomed. He is given a robe, a ring, and a place of authority ...

"My point is that the crown prince, even though he was the son of the king, while living with the beggar was no different from the beggar. He did not know his position of dominion.

"Many Christians today are like that. They belong to Christ, they are sons of God, yet the devil keeps them in ignorance so they will not realize their divine right of dominion. For once they understand the basis of their dominion in Christ, they live a new life attendant with power and victories.

"It is imperative that you know—and that you know that you know your rights as a follower of the Lord Jesus Christ.

For YOU are entitled to dominion."³⁸

Do It!!!!

James 1:22 KJV But be ye **doers of the word**, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves (emphasis added).

As I said above, I often give believers MacMillan's book and advise them to "do" page 27. Sometimes they come back to me crying over the very same attacks and worse. It is evident the devil is having high carnival in their lives. I ask them if they have the

³⁸Billye Brim, "Dominion," Billye Brim Ministries. March 5, 2021, <https://billyebrim.org/dominion/>

EPHESIANS:

LESSON 4: EPHESIANS 2:5-6

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

book. And they often reply, "Yes. I read it. It's here somewhere." To have knowledge without acting upon it is useless. Barren. Without effect.

SESSION 9 ENDS HERE

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

EPHESIANS

THE PANOPLY

Qualifications for Maintaining Position

SESSION 10 STARTS HERE

Belief

Ephesians 1:19 KJV And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power,

John MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*

We are accustomed to consider “belief” as simple mental acquiescence with some particular truth. But its root leads us to action; that which the mind accepts, the will must obey. We do not truly believe, therefore, unless our conviction is manifested in our life.³⁹

(See more in MacMillan, pages 26–27.)

Humility

Humility is your humbling your thoughts to God’s thoughts, to the Word of God. We must not let our pride elevate our thoughts above God’s thoughts.

John MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*

While belief thus introduces us to our place of throne power, only humility will ensure our retaining it. ...

The forces against whom we contend, the principalities and powers, the world rulers of this darkness, the hosts of wicked spirits in the heavenlies, know us far better than we know our selves. ... One of their tested weapons is spiritual pride, and too often it proves effective.⁴⁰

(See more in MacMillan, pages 28–29.)

³⁹ John A. MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*. (originally published as a series of articles, 1932; repr., Branson, MO: Billye Brim Ministries Publications, 2015), 26–27.

⁴⁰ MacMillan, 28.

Boldness

John MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*

With profound humility, however, there may go the greatest boldness in the Name. True boldness is faith in full manifestation. When God has spoken, to hold back is not humility but unbelief.⁴¹

(See more in MacMillan, pages 29–30.)

Absence of Fear

John MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*

The heavenlies, while the place of “every spiritual blessing” (Ephesians 1:3), are also the place of most intense conflict. Let the believer, whose eyes have been opened to the comprehension of his throne rights in Christ, definitely accept his seat and begin to exercise the spiritual authority which it confers upon him. He quickly realized that he is a marked man.⁴²

(See more in MacMillan, pages 30–31.)

This is not the time to hide. God is the One who has set us up there in the heavenlies. He’s the One who told us to rule and reign.

The Panoply of God

“Panoply” (Wikipedia)

A **panoply** is a complete suit of armor. The word represents the ancient Greek πανοπλία (*panoplía*), where the word πᾶν *pân* means “all”, and ὄπλον *hóplon*, “arms.” Thus *panoply* refers to the full armor of a hoplite or heavy-armed soldier, i.e. the shield, breastplate, helmet, and greaves, together with the sword and lance.
[Wikipedia](#)⁴³

The panoply of God is the full armor of God. Smith Wigglesworth wrote: “There is a place in God where Satan dare not come.”⁴⁴

John MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*

The only place of safety is the occupation of the seat itself. It is “far above” the enemy. If the believer abides steadfastly by faith in this location, he cannot be touched. Consequently the enemy puts forth all his “wiles” [strategies] to draw him

⁴¹ MacMillan, 29.

⁴² MacMillan, 30.

⁴³ “Panoply,” Wikipedia. Accessed January 20, 2021, <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Panoply>

⁴⁴ Smith Wigglesworth, “Righteousness,” smithwigglesworth.com. Accessed February 4, 2022. <http://www.smithwigglesworth.com/sermons/eif8.htm>

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

down in spirit, for once out of his seat, his authority is gone, and he is no longer dangerous, and further, he is open to attack.

At his point is seen the meaning of the message of Ephesians chapter 6.⁴⁵

(See more in MacMillan, pages 31–32.)

Halakha: Walking It Out

Paul was a Jew. As such, he frequently used a Jewish teaching methodology. We see that here in Ephesians. He put forth the great truths of the Word of God. The presentation of the truths is followed by what the Jews called the Halakha. The Hebrew word **הֲלָכָה** (*halak*) means “to walk” or “to go.” So Halakha has come to mean the teaching about how to walk out the great truths of the Word of God. Paul employed this technique in his writing: first, present the truths in Ephesians 1–3 and then, in chapters 4–6, show how to walk it out.

The truth is that we are seated in heavenly places in Christ, but we have to walk out that truth while we are physically here in our earth suit. We’re skipping to chapter six, since that is part of the Halakha that Paul is teaching.

Ephesians 6:10 KJV ¶ Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

“Finally”

Rick Renner sheds some light on what is possibly a better representation of the word translated “finally.”

Rick Renner, Sparkling Gems from the Greek

The word “finally” is one of the most important words in this text. It is taken from the Greek phrase *tou loipou* and would be better translated *for the rest of the matter; in conclusion; or in summation*. The phrase *tou loipou* is used in other Greek manuscripts of that same period to depict something so extremely important that it is placed at the very end of the letter. This way, if the reader remembers nothing else in the letter, he will be more likely to remember this one thing.⁴⁶

Halakha and Responsa in Paul’s Teaching

Ephesians 4:1 shows the transition in the Book where Paul pivots from truth to Halakha.

Ephesians 4:1 KJV I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called,

| Note Paul calls us to “walk worthy.”

⁴⁵ MacMillan, 31.

⁴⁶ Rick Renner, *Sparkling Gems from the Greek* (Tulsa: Teach All Nations, 2003), 68.

“vocation”

Strong’s Greek

2821. κλήσις *klésis*, *klay’-sis* ... an *invitation* (figuratively):—calling.

Our vocation, our ministry, is our ministry as we are seated in the heavenlies. Paul, in the first three chapters of Ephesians, has been talking about the believers’ ministry to rule and reign.

In Judaism, the Halakha takes up thousands of volumes. They comprise the teachings of rabbis throughout the centuries.

Responsa in 1 Corinthians

Paul’s use of this teaching method is seen also in 1 Corinthians. In chapter one, he expresses the reason he is writing the letter to the church in Corinth.

1 Corinthians 1:11 KJV For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them which are of the house of Chloe, that there are contentions among you.

Someone from the house of Chloe has let Paul know that there is strife among the members of the Corinthian church. They needed Paul to address the issues, so they wrote him a letter.

In the letter, they explained the troubling topics. In the First Epistle (Letter) to the Corinthians, we see Paul’s response in which he deals with the issues at hand.

Beginning in chapter seven we see Paul shift into *responsa* mode, basically a question-and-answer format. The questions have been delivered; now the rabbi (Paul) will respond (answer). Frequently, Paul would begin a new topic by stating the issue or question with an opening like, “Now concerning ...” His decision would then follow. First Corinthians is a classic example of Paul’s use of this technique.

1 Corinthians 7:1 KJV Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: It is good for a man not to touch a woman.

“Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me:”

Notice that Paul is getting ready to introduce an issue the Corinthians are asking him about.

“It is good for a man not to touch a woman.”

This is not Paul’s answer; it is what they need an answer about.

In chapter eight, he addresses the issue of meat offered to idols. Can they eat such meat or not?

In chapter nine, he has to deal with those who question his apostleship.

In chapter ten, he responds to their questions about how their ancestors could experience God’s miraculous provision in the desert and still displease Him and be “overthrown in the wilderness.”

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Chapter 12 begins with, “Now concerning spiritual gifts” (KJV). Paul is still answering questions.

In chapter 14, he addresses an important issue the Corinthians raised:

1 Corinthians 14:34–38 KJV

1 Cor. 14:34 Let your women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but they are commanded to be under obedience as also saith the law.

This was not Paul’s answer; it was the issue they raised.

“Let your women keep silence in the churches: for it is not permitted unto them to speak”

Some in the church were saying that women were not allowed to speak in the church. Why? What was their authority for saying this?

“they are commanded to be under obedience as also saith the law”

The problem here is that the Law does not require that women keep silent. People were claiming it violated the Law, but it just wasn’t so.

1 Cor. 14:35 And if they will learn any thing, let them ask their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in the church.

Paul continues to state the issue that some were raising.

1 Cor. 14:36 What? came the word of God out from you? or came it unto you only?

Paul’s response is priceless. “What?” he replies. “Are you the only ones who know anything?” (You can almost hear him shouting at the parchment.)

1 Cor. 14:37 If any man think himself to be a prophet, or spiritual, let him acknowledge that the things that I write unto you are the commandments of the Lord.

1 Cor. 14:38 But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.

“let him acknowledge that the things that I write unto you are the commandments of the Lord”

Paul doesn’t pull any punches here. It sounds like some of those trying to force this teaching about women on other may have included some of the “super spiritual” saints in the church. Paul makes it clear to them that what he is telling them is coming straight from the Lord. Still, they can be stubbornly ignorant if they so choose.

Now Back to Ephesians

The first three chapters of Ephesians are about our ministry in the heavenlies. Wow! Chapters four through six are about how you, therefore, walk it out. In walking it out, we wear the panoply, the full suit of armor.

John MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*

At this point is seen the meaning of the message of Ephesians chapter 6. To maintain his place against the wiles of the devil, the believer must be constantly arrayed in full armor. The different parts of this armor symbolize certain spiritual attitudes which he must maintain. It is most important to understand that the armor itself, when worn, constitutes the protection of the believer and not his activity against the foe.

Brim Note: Your activity against the foe is done from your position, seated in the heavenlies with Christ.

Fully harnessed, he is fully kept and is unhampered in his ministry of authority. All that he need be concerned about is, like a good soldier, to keep his armor bright and well secured about him.⁴⁷

Ephesians 6:10–20 KJV

Eph. 6:10 ¶ Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

Eph. 6:11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.

“the whole armour of God”

Literally, “the *panoplía* of God.”

Eph. 6:12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high *places*.

“we wrestle not against flesh and blood”

Yes, we will wrestle, but our struggle is not actually against people.

Ultimately, we are wrestling against spiritual powers who may, at times, manifest themselves through flesh-and-blood people.

It is also interesting to note that our wrestling match is fixed. Our adversary doesn't stand a chance. The power-endued follower of Christ is not the weaker opponent.

Eph. 6:13 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all [Greek: *overcome*], to stand. [*i.e., having overcome all, hold your position*]

“having done all”

Greek: κατεργασάμενοι (*katergasamenoí*), aorist participle middle of κατεργάζομαι (*katergazomai*)

⁴⁷ MacMillan, 31

Strong's Greek

2716. **κατεργάζομαι katērgazōmai** *kat-er-gad'-zom-ahee*; ... to work fully, i.e. *accomplish*; by implication to *finish, fashion*:—cause, do (deed), perform, work (out).

Eph. 6:14 Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness; [See 1 Thessalonians 5:8 below.]

“having your loins girt about with truth”

MacMillan says the girdle of truth is “the clear understanding of God’s Word, which, like a soldier’s belt holds the rest of the armor in place.”⁴⁸

“the breastplate of righteousness”

1 Thessalonians 5:8 KJV But let us, who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love; and for an helmet, the hope of salvation.

We are made the righteousness of Christ in Jesus Christ. The walking out of that is righteous acts, leading an evident righteous life. Our life on Earth should exemplify our right standing with God. As those who wear the breastplate of righteousness, we are to walk in faith and love.

MacMillan notes that the breastplate of righteousness for the believer is “not, as often stated, the righteousness of Christ, but rather the active obedience to the Word which he has received.”⁴⁹

You will be vulnerable to the attacks of the enemy if you walk in willful disobedience.

Eph. 6:15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace;

“the gospel of peace”

What is this peace? The gospel brings peace between us and God himself. God deeply desires to be reconciled with all people. Our “feet” are to carry that message to a lost world.

Romans 5:1 KJV Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

2 Corinthians 5:18–19 NASB1995

2 Cor. 5:18 Now all these things are from God, who reconciled us to Himself through Christ and gave us the ministry of reconciliation,

2 Cor. 5:19 namely, that God was in Christ reconciling the world to Himself, not counting their trespasses against them, and He has committed to us the word of reconciliation.

⁴⁸ MacMillan, 31.

⁴⁹ MacMillan, 31.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Eph. 6:16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

“the shield of faith”

There were many kinds of shields in use in Paul’s day. The word used here is *thureos* (θυρεός). MacMillan says this represents “the large door-shaped shield covering the whole body, which indicates his complete refuge under the blood of Calvary, where no power of the enemy can penetrate.”⁵⁰

Eph. 6:17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God:

“the helmet of salvation”

MacMillan: “It is a remarkable fact that the hope of salvation, the coming of the Lord Jesus, is the only helmet that seems able to protect the head in these days of apostasy from the truth.”⁵¹

“the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God”

MacMillan points out that the sword of the Spirit “shows the Word of God used in an active sense, even as the ‘girdle’ shows it in a defensive one.”⁵²

The Holy Spirit wields the sword. You can use the Word of God to cut people to pieces. On the contrary, the Word of God is to be used in a spirit of truth and love and of faith and righteousness.

Eph. 6:18 Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints;

This refers to all kinds of prayer. Rick Renner believes that prayer, listed in verse 18, could be compared to the Roman lance (*pilum* in Latin).

Rick Renner, *Sparkling Gems from the Greek*

The lance gave the Roman soldier the ability to strike his enemy from a distance; ... Although Paul does not specifically mention the lance in his list of weaponry in Ephesians 6, it is suggested in verse 18 when Paul writes, ‘Praying always ...’ With the lance of prayer, each believer is able to assault the enemy from a distance, doing him so much damage that he is paralyzed in his attempts to come any nearer?”⁵³

Eph. 6:19 And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel,

Eph. 6:20 For which I am an ambassador in bonds: that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

⁵⁰ MacMillan, 32.

⁵¹ MacMillan, 32.

⁵² MacMillan, 32.

⁵³ Renner, 320.

Fear

Fear is one of the enemy's favorite wiles (strategies) to use against believers. There are all kinds of fear: fear of heights, the dark, failure. The list goes on.

Job's Fear

The Old Testament tells the story of a man of upstanding character.

Job 1:1 NASB1995 There was a man in the land of Uz whose name was Job; and that man was blameless, upright, fearing God and turning away from evil.

One day this righteous man became the topic of conversation in the spirit realm.

Job 1:8-12 NASB1995

Job 1:8 The LORD said to Satan, "Have you considered My servant Job? For there is no one like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, fearing God and turning away from evil."

Job 1:9 Then Satan answered the LORD, "Does Job fear God for nothing?"

Job 1:10 Have You not made a hedge about him and his house and all that he has, on every side? You have blessed the work of his hands, and his possessions have increased in the land.

Job 1:11 But put forth Your hand now and touch all that he has; he will surely curse You to Your face."

| Satan suggests that the only reason Job serves God is that He has a protective hedge around him.

Job 1:12 Then the LORD said to Satan, "Behold, all that he has is in your power, only do not put forth your hand on him." So Satan departed from the presence of the LORD.

| God did not give Job permission to attack Job. He simply stated the fact that the earthly realm is Satan's domain. Adam had let Satan in when he relinquished his lease in the Garden of Eden. God didn't say, "I give you permission to get Job."

| Fear can give Satan an open door. The Bible has some encouraging words to help us deal with fear.

2 Timothy 1:7 KJV For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.

1 John 4:18 KJV There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love.

Job 3:25 KJV For the thing which I greatly feared is come upon me, and that which I was afraid of is come unto me.

| It actually appears that Job's fear gave Satan just the open door he needed.

Rahab: Faith over Fear

The Book of Joshua tells the story of Israel's conquest of the Land of Canaan. Their first military was the fortified city of Jericho. The two spies Joshua sent into the city to scope it out found refuge in the home of a harlot named Rahab.

When the king's men came looking for them, Rahab hid the spies on the roof under stalks of flax and told the searchers that the men had already left the city. She must have been convincing, because they left Jericho to pursue Joshua's men (who were, of course, safely tucked away at Rahab's house).

With the danger passed, Rahab went up to the roof to check on her "guests." Her words must have surprised them.

Joshua 2:9–15 KJV

Josh. 2:9 And she said unto the men, I know that the Lord hath given you the land, and that your terror is fallen upon us, and that all the inhabitants of the land faint because of you.

Josh. 2:10 For we have heard how the Lord dried up the water of the Red sea for you, when ye came out of Egypt; and what ye did unto the two kings of the Amorites, that were on the other side Jordan, Sihon and Og, whom ye utterly destroyed.

"For we have heard ..."

Rahab reports that the people of Jericho were quite familiar with how God had parted the waters of the Sea of Reeds so they could walk across on dry land. That had happened forty years before! They also were well aware of the utter defeat suffered on the other side of the Jordan River by two Amorite kings: Sihon (see Numbers 21) and Og (see Deuteronomy 3).

Josh. 2:11 And as soon as we had heard these things, our hearts did melt, neither did there remain any more courage in any man, because of you: for the Lord your God, he is God in heaven above, and in earth beneath.

The inhabitants of Jericho were terrified by the reports of how the Hebrews had been victorious just on the other side of the Jordan.

Josh. 2:12 Now therefore, I pray you, swear unto me by the Lord, since I have shewed you kindness, that ye will also shew kindness unto my father's house, and give me a true token:

"token"

Strong's Hebrew 226. אֹתָּהּ 'ōwth ōth ... a *signal* (literally or figuratively), as a *flag, beacon, monument, omen, prodigy, evidence*, etc.:—mark, miracle, (en)sign, token.

Josh. 2:13 And that ye will save alive my father, and my mother, and my brethren, and my sisters, and all that they have, and deliver our lives from death.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Josh. 2:14 And the men answered her, Our life for yours, if ye utter not this our business. And it shall be, when the Lord hath given us the land, that we will deal kindly and truly with thee.

Josh. 2:15 Then she let them down by a cord through the window: for her house was upon the town wall, and she dwelt upon the wall.

Rahab knew that God's people would be victorious and conquer Jericho. In faith, she appealed to the spies that the army of the Lord would return her kindness and spare her and her family, as well as their possessions. She then helped them escape.

Joshua 2:17-25 KJV

Josh. 6:17 And the city shall be accursed, even it, and all that are therein, to the Lord: only Rahab the harlot shall live, she and all that are with her in the house, because she hid the messengers that we sent.

Josh. 2:18 Behold, when we come into the land, thou shalt bind this line of scarlet thread in the window which thou didst let us down by: and thou shalt bring thy father, and thy mother, and thy brethren, and all thy father's household, home unto thee.

Josh. 2:19 And it shall be, that whosoever shall go out of the doors of thy house into the street, his blood shall be upon his head, and we will be guiltless: and whosoever shall be with thee in the house, his blood shall be on our head, if any hand be upon him.

Josh. 2:20 And if thou utter this our business, then we will be quit of thine oath which thou hast made us to swear.

Josh. 2:21 And she said, According unto your words, so be it. And she sent them away, and they departed: and she bound the scarlet line in the window.

Those who would be in the house protected by the scarlet line (symbolic of the blood line) would be spared the devastation that Jericho was about to suffer.

Josh. 6:22 But Joshua had said unto the two men that had spied out the country, Go into the harlot's house, and bring out thence the woman, and all that she hath, as ye sware unto her.

Josh. 6:23 And the young men that were spies went in, and brought out Rahab, and her father, and her mother, and her brethren, and all that she had; and they brought out all her kindred, and left them without the camp of Israel.

Josh. 6:24 And they burnt the city with fire, and all that was therein: only the silver, and the gold, and the vessels of brass and of iron, they put into the treasury of the house of the Lord.

Josh. 6:25 And Joshua saved Rahab the harlot alive, and her father's household, and all that she had; and she dwelleth in Israel even unto this day; because she hid the messengers, which Joshua sent to spy out Jericho.

The blood line protected not only Rahab and her kindred, but also "all she had." As Christ-followers, we are under the blood of Jesus Christ. We have a right to draw a blood line around ourselves and our families and all we have.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

That principle goes all the way back to when Moses communicated to the people what God wanted them to do in the very first Passover. It wasn't enough to sprinkle the blood of the lamb on the door posts and the lintel. They had to be *in* the house to be safe; they had to be behind the blood. Then the destroyer can't come near.

SESSION 10 ENDS HERE

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

EPHESIANS

SESSION 11

Walking Out New Testament Realities: Part 3

SESSION 11 STARTS HERE

- I. We're learning how to cooperate with what Jesus has already done for us in Him
- II. Here's an exercise to connect with the inner man of the heart
 - A. Look into the eyes of your spouse or family member
 - B. Sing to them, "I Love You With the Love of the Lord"

Ephesians 4:11–32 KJV

Eph. 4:11 And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers;

Eph. 4:12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

Eph. 4:13 Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ:

Eph. 4:14 That we *henceforth* be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, *and* cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;

Eph. 4:15 But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, *even* Christ:

Eph. 4:16 From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

Eph. 4:17 ¶ This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye *henceforth* walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind,

Eph. 4:18 Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart:

Eph. 4:19 Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness.

Eph. 4:20 But ye have not so learned Christ;

Eph. 4:21 If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus:

Eph. 4:22 That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts;

Eph. 4:23 And be renewed in the spirit of your mind;

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Eph. 4:24 And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

Eph. 4:25 Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another.

Eph. 4:26 Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath:

Eph. 4:27 Neither give place to the devil.

Eph. 4:28 Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with *his* hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth.

Eph. 4:29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

Eph. 4:30 And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

Eph. 4:31 Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice:

Eph. 4:32 And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.

- I. **Ephesians 4:17** ... that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk ... — Every time the word “walk” is used, I’m going to put a little “w” for “walk”
- II. **Ephesians 4:18** Having the understanding darkened being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart

Ephesians 1:18 The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints,

 - A. In this prayer that we are encouraged to pray every day, we pray for the eyes of our understanding to be enlightened
 - B. AMPC says, “the eyes of your heart flooded with light”
 - C. In Ephesians 4, he’s contrasting the ignorance of the nations with the light of the Body of Christ
 - D. Our eyes should be flooded with light instead of walking in the blindness of the world
- III. **Ephesians 4:21** If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus:
 - A. Part of our prayer armor, as described in Ephesian 6:14, is “... having your loins girt about with truth ...”
 - B. The truth here is that we’ve been seated with Him in heavenly places
- IV. **Ephesians 4:22** That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts
 - A. We put off the former conversation
 - B. This is the same as casting off the old lifestyle
 - C. When you’re deceived, you think you’re right
 - D. “deceitful lusts” say, “if it feels good, do it”; we put that off

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- V. Ephesians 4:23** And be renewed in the spirit of your mind
- VI. Ephesians 4:24** And that ye put on the new man ...
- A. We can “put on” the new man just like Aunt Fannie
 - 1. Aunt Fannie took on the persona of a book character when she visited
 - 2. We can “put on” the Holy Ghost
 - B. We “put on” the new man
- VII. Ephesians 4:26** Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath
- A. Jesus probably didn’t have a smiley face when He drove out the money changers
 - B. He was angry with righteous indignation
- VIII. Ephesians 4:29** Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers.
- A. Don’t forget the evil report brought back by the ten spies of Numbers 13
 - B. Corrupt communication isn’t just cussing
 - C. Doubt and unbelief are also corrupt communication
 - D. We can say, “Let no doubt and unbelief proceed out of your mouth”
- IX. Ephesians 4:31** Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice:
- A. There are three uses of the word “put” in close proximity in this chapter
 - 1. Verse 22 “Put off the former man”
 - 2. Verse 24 “Put on the new man”
 - 3. Verse 31 “Put away” “all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking”
 - B. This is how we walk out being seated with Christ in heavenly places
 - C. We don’t come down from or lose our place
- X. Ephesians 4:32** And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you.
- A. Forgiving keeps your heart tender
 - B. This Scripture is speaking specifically of forgiving other Christians
 - C. Forgiving is what adults (people in the manhood stage) do
 - 1. An adult may have to deal with a baby who did something out of curiosity that they shouldn’t have
 - 2. Even if the baby spread toothpaste all over the bathroom floor, it’s easy to forgive, because the offender is young
 - 3. Some in the Body of Christ are young in the spirit realm
 - 4. Adults just forgive them without judgment
 - 5. We’re all growing
 - 6. We look for the best and not the worst in every person

2 Corinthians 5:17–19 KJV

2 Cor. 5:17 Therefore if any man *be* in Christ, *he is* a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.

2 Cor. 5:18 And all things *are* of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation;

2 Cor. 5:19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

2 Corinthians 5:18–19 AMPC

¹⁸ But all things are from God, Who through *Jesus* Christ reconciled us to Himself [received us into favor, brought us into harmony with Himself] and gave to us the ministry of reconciliation [that by word and deed we might aim to bring others into harmony with Him]. ¹⁹ It was God [personally present] in Christ, reconciling *and* restoring the world to favor with Himself, not counting up *and* holding against [men] their trespasses [but cancelling them], and committing to us the message of reconciliation (of the restoration to favor).

- XI. **2 Corinthians 5:17–19**—God has settled the sin issue of even the most vile sinner through the shed blood of Jesus Christ

Hebrews 1:1-3 KJV

Heb. 1:1 ¶ God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets,

Heb. 1:2 Hath in these last days spoken unto us by *his* Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds;

Heb. 1:3 Who being the brightness of *his* glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by

- XII. **Hebrews 1:3** “... upholding all things by the word of his power ...”
- A. **Ephesians 4:29** Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth
 - B. God is training us and leading us
 1. It’s almost like being on a conveyor belt like those in the baggage claim areas in the airport
 2. The suitcase comes closer and closer to where you’re waiting
 3. Our situation is like this
 - a. When we are first born again, the words of our mouths may not be “cleaned up” yet
 - b. God wants us to continue to improve our words until “no corrupt communication” proceeds “out of [our] mouth”
 4. As we progress, we would rather cuss than say a word of doubt
 5. We should develop a passion for the Lord that brings a sensitivity to Him that causes us to immediately recognize any word of darkness
 - C. We’re being changed from glory to glory into the image of Christ
 1. He upholds all things by the word of His power
 2. He’s allowing us to grow in that, too

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- D. We're like the centurion
 - 1. His faith had grown in his understanding of authority
 - 2. This enabled him to say, "Speak the word only and my servant shall be healed"
 - 3. He understood the value of his words
 - 4. When he spoke to his servants, they did what he said
- E. We are also learning to value our words
 - 1. We separate our mouths to speak words of light and love
 - 2. We become conformed to the image of the Master in upholding things by the Word of His power
- D. A question was posed to Gertrude Reidt, the daughter of John G. Lake
 - 1. Jesus said, "Whatsoever you bind on earth shall be bound in heaven and whatsoever you loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven"
 - 2. Why is it that some people must continually keep binding while others don't need to?
 - 3. This was the daughter of John G. Lake—the man on whose hands Bubonic Plague germs died
 - a. Those who witnessed that the germs had died asked, "What happened?"
 - b. He said, "That, sirs, is the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus."
 - 4. Her answer to the question was, "It depends on what you're binding him with."
 - a. If you use a soft cotton string to bind, it requires reinforcement
 - b. If your words have little power in them, you have to go over and over
 - c. If the speaker's words have value because they have been speaking light, purity, faith, and love, the binding agent is like an iron-forged chain
 - d. Such a chain binds the enemy with one word
 - 5. God has endowed our lips with as much power as we can handle without it destroying us
 - 6. One preacher reasoned that the Lord doesn't put more power in our mouth is because it would be used to hurt others
 - a. If someone pulled out in front of us in traffic, we would say something like "you turkey"
 - b. The offender would then become a turkey
 - 7. The Holy Spirit revealed to Dr. Billye Brim a truth about our words
 - a. There is NOT an angel that follows us around determining if we are doing well spiritually
 - b. If the angel saw we were doing well, he would say "power up!"
 - c. This way, our good words on good days would have the appropriate power

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- d. If the angel saw we were doing poorly, he would say “power down!”
 - e. This way, our damaging words on bad days would not have any power
8. As we grow in Him, we’re learning to cooperate with Him so that He is living His life through us

Ephesians 5:1-8 KJV

Eph. 5:1 ¶ Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children;

Eph. 5:2 And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweetsmelling savour.

Eph. 5:3 ¶ But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints;

Eph. 5:4 Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks.

Eph. 5:5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God.

Eph. 5:6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience.

Eph. 5:7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them.

Eph. 5:8 For ye were sometimes darkness, but now *are ye* light in the Lord: walk as children of light:

XIII. Ephesians 5:1-2

- A. Here we see the word “walk” again (like the Hebrew concept of “*halacha*”)
- B. This is how we walk it out
- C. We’re to walk in love as Christ loved us
- D. He wouldn’t tell us to do anything we couldn’t do

XIV. Ephesians 5:6

- A. The devil is a deceiver
- B. Gertrude Reidt (quoted above) said, “In the last days, before Jesus comes, the enemy is going to try to deceive.”
- C. Pastor Tim Henderson shared about visions and dreams that he has been experiencing
 - 1. The Lord told Pastor Tim that His love is fierce and passionate
 - 2. He said that His wrath is as fierce and passionate as His love
 - 3. He said that the foundation of His judgment is love because God is love
- D. There was judgment in the days of Noah
 - 1. Only eight people still possessed the knowledge of God
 - 2. Love caused the flood to preserve the knowledge of God

XV. Ephesians 5:7-8

- A. Right now, we are light
- B. The light is in the Lord
- C. We are to walk as children of light (there's "halacha" again)

XVI. An account about the light of the Lord from *John G. Lake: His Life, His Sermons, His Boldness of Faith*⁵⁴

- A. During one of John G. Lake's meetings, a prominent gentleman entered the service
 - 1. He was a government employee
 - 2. He was a man of great stature
 - 3. His name was Mr. Jabber
- B. While walking up the aisle, he fell to the floor, prostrate
- C. His wife and children gathered from the congregation and knelt around him
 - 1. The people stayed in quiet prayer
 - 2. This was the "mood of the Spirit"
- D. The Holy Spirit dealt with him in that place
 - 1. He dealt with his sins
 - 2. He brought Mr. Jabber to salvation
- E. The Spirit then fell on one of the sons, who fell prostrate beside his father
 - 1. The Holy Spirit also fell on the other members of the family, one by one, until they were all under the power of God
 - 2. When the Holy Spirit's presence had lifted a bit, the sons confessed their disobedience
 - 3. The family knelt with arms around each other
 - 4. The tenderness and melting power of the Holy Spirit could only be understood by those who were present
- F. Br. Lake wanted these meetings to be free of denominational prejudice
{A parenthesis about Br. Kenneth Hagin until H}
- G. Brother Kenneth E. Hagin had experienced being freed from some of these prejudices
 - 1. He was spending time in the presence of the Lord
 - 2. He was asking the Lord to remove from his soul anything that shouldn't be there
 - 3. An "ugly-looking thing" came out of him
 - a. It had a bad smell

⁵⁴ John G. Lake as edited by Kenneth Copeland Publications, *John G. Lake: His Life, His Sermons, His Boldness of Faith* (Fort Worth, TX: Kenneth Copeland Publications, 1994), 295-301.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- b. He asked the Lord what it was, and the Lord told him, “That’s your old Baptist tradition”
 - c. Anything that is of prejudice is opposite God’s light
 - 4. He continued in that “examination room” with the Lord
 - 5. Something else came out that looked like an old boot
 - a. Br. Hagin asked the Lord what it was
 - b. The Lord answered, “That’s your Pentecostal tradition”
 - 6. The Lord loves us right where we are, but wants us to be free of the things that try to hang on
 - 7. Miss Shelli had to be freed from being touchy
 - a. When we don’t walk in love, it’s like a noisy gong or nails on a chalkboard
 - b. The Lord wants our words to be powerful
 - c. It takes letting Him touch some things that go “ouch”

{End of parenthesis about Kenneth Hagin; return to Br. Lake}
- H. In the afternoon service, a young lady fell to the floor from her chair
 - 1. After a time, she asked her friend to send Br. Lake to her
 - 2. When Br. Lake came, she shared that the Lord had told her to tell Br. Lake not to be discouraged that night
- I. After that service, Br. Lake was exhausted and took a nap, asking to be awakened at 7:30
 - 1. His hosts didn’t awaken him, thinking he was too exhausted
 - 2. They decided to have a service without Br. Lake
 - 3. He awakened at 8:00 and hurried to the service
- J. The service was being conducted in a very formal manner without him
- K. The pastor handed the service over to him, but the atmosphere remained very formal
 - 1. Br. Lake prayed for the Lord to move in a way that would end the formality
 - 2. The Lord directed Br. Lake to go on with the service while He dealt with the matter
- L. The anointing of the Holy Spirit came on Br. Lake powerfully
 - 1. The formality of the service disappeared
 - 2. After the service, Br. Lake knelt on the floor and a spirit of prayer came on him
 - a. The Spirit continued to get stronger upon Br. Lake
 - b. He began to pray in tongues and then interpret them
 - 3. He continued to pray, but became conscious of much noise
 - a. He didn’t raise his head or open his eyes as long as the spirit of prayer was on him

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- b. When he looked up, the congregation were all looking toward the choir gallery
- M. The Holy Spirit had fallen upon the choir
 - 1. Almost every one of them was lying on the floor under the power of the Holy Spirit
 - 2. When one row fell from their seats, they pushed the chairs in front of them forward on top of the fallen ones on the floor in front of them
 - 3. The deacons quickly picked up the chairs laying on top of the choir members
 - 4. The unbelievers were shocked and rushed out of the church door
 - 5. Br. Lake told the ushers to lock the door
 - a. This prevented anyone from coming in
 - b. Br. Lake felt like it wasn't a good time for unbelievers to be present
 - 6. Br. Lake sat down in the congregation, praying quietly with them
 - 7. One by one, those who were on the floor began to confess their sins
 - a. They asked for forgiveness, restoration, and power to overcome
 - b. Once they had confessed, the Holy Spirit would permit them to arise
 - c. Each one had felt the power of the Holy Spirit
 - d. Many were baptized in the Holy Spirit with the evidence of speaking in other tongues
 - 8. Husbands and wives confessed to each other, children and parents confessed to each other, and sweethearts confessed to each other
 - 9. The pianist, Mr. Braun, lay beside the piano for about an hour
 - a. The Holy Spirit guided Br. Lake to lay hands on him and pray
 - b. After about half an hour, Mr. Braun prayed intensely to God
 - c. He asked for Br. Lake and then asked Br. Lake to go get his wife
 - d. When his wife reached him, he confessed to three years of adultery
 - e. He and his wife wept together as the Lord worked in them both
 - f. They were both baptized in the Holy Spirit, spoke in tongues, and prophesied
 - g. Mr. Braun asked Br. Lake why he had laid hands on him
 - h. Br. Lake said that the Holy Spirit had led him to
 - i. Mr. Braun revealed that he had been dealing with breast cancer ever since the beginning of the adulterous affair
 - j. When Br. Lake had laid hands on him, the growth began to die, and then disappeared

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- k. He also set things right with all of those that he had cheated and offended
 - 10. God dealt with people in a thorough and remarkable way
 - N. Br. Lake went with the Jabbers back to their home
 - 1. As Br. Lake prayed over the meal, the Holy Spirit fell on Mrs. Jabber, and she began to sing in angelic tongues
 - 2. The Spirit then fell on Mr. Jabber as well, and he was baptized in the Holy Ghost
 - a. He also began to sing and praise in tongues
 - b. He and Mrs. Jabber arose from their places at the table and met in the middle of the floor
 - c. They knelt on the floor, still singing in angelic song
 - d. All of the others knelt on the floor around them
 - e. As the song continued, the power of God fell on them
 - f. It was as if they were in the heavenlies
 - 3. Neighbors who had attended the meeting and lived nearby came to the house
 - 4. Soon the house was filled with people
 - 5. The Spirit of God fell on one after another
 - a. They were filled with the Holy Spirit
 - b. They joined in the song of joy in other tongues
 - 6. As the sister sang, her brother came in
 - a. He had been living a wicked life
 - b. He had been out all night
 - 7. As the brother looked at and listened to his sister, the Spirit of God fell on him
 - a. He fell on his knees and threw up his hands
 - b. He confessed his sins
 - c. He called on God for forgiveness and salvation
 - d. Right at that moment, the sun arose over the mountains and shined into the room
 - e. It seemed like the group was no longer in the earthly realm
 - 8. God's glorious presence and transformation is not just for church, but is for our homes as well
 - 9. Even after eight years, the glory of that hour remains in Br. Lake's spirit
 - XVII.** Miss Shelli wrapped up the class with prayer and the move of the Spirit of God
 - A. Father, please teach us and renew us in our mind and thinking
 - 1. Teach us to cooperate in greater measure with Your Holy Spirit
 - 2. We ask this and we'll follow Your direction
-

- B. The Lord's response to us was, "... what you have heard and what has been read is nothing compared to what I shall demonstrate before your very eyes."
- C. The Lord told us that "low-level thinking will dissipate in the light of My presence."
- D. He let us know that the Holy Spirit would do a work of depth that reaches into our hearts
- E. The class ended with everyone singing praises to the Lord

SESSION 11 ENDS HERE

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

EPHESIANS

CHAPTER 2:4-7

Eternity Future | Grace and Glory

SESSION 12 STARTS HERE

Ephesians 2:4-7 KJV

Eph. 2:4 ¶ But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us,

Eph. 2:5 Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)

Eph. 2:6 And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:

Eph. 2:7 That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.

Quickened together with Christ.

Raised together with Christ.

Seated together with Christ.

The Body of Christ is first manifested as such in the Resurrection.

This entity, the Body of Christ, in the mind of God from before the *katabole* of the world, is now brought forth in manifestation.

When the Risen Savior entered the room where they were gathered, He breathed on His disciples and the first *ekklesia* manifested: the Body of Christ upon the earth (John 20:22).

John 20:21-22 KJV

John 20:21 Then said Jesus to them again, Peace *be* unto you: as *my* Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

John 20:22 And when he had said this, he breathed on *them*, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost:

In Order That

The Exhibition!

In the ages to come, the Lord is going to show off the Church, the Body of Christ.

Kenneth E. Hagin's Example: Little Pentecostal Lady "Going to the Show."

The Body of Christ will be a recognizable entity throughout all the ages to come and will be *shown off—exhibited—*throughout eternity as special trophies of His grace.

The Ages to Come

Trophies of His Grace | The Praise of the Glory of His Grace

From Billye Brim's Journal
Sunday December 3, 2004

As I was praying in tongues over the depths of meaning in the first prayer in Ephesians, I heard myself saying in English: *The pilings ... The pilings ...* My mind went back to when I worked in the construction office during the building of a large chemical plant south of Baton Rouge along the Mississippi River. I recalled the sound of the crew driving pilings into the soft soil to provide a firm foundation.

A strong inner voice corrected my thoughts that were traveling on the wrong track. "**Wuest!**" I heard. Then I knew to run downstairs to get my *Wuest Translation of the New Testament* (which I rarely read). You can imagine my surprise when not more than ten minutes after I'd heard myself say "the pilings," I read:

Ephesians 2:4-7 Wuest New Testament

... because of His great love with which He loved us, and we being dead with respect to our trespasses, made us alive together with the Christ ... and raised us with Him and seated us with Him in the heavenly places in Christ Jesus, **in order that He might exhibit for His own glory in the ages that will pile themselves one upon another in continuous succession, the surpassing wealth of His grace in kindness to us in Christ Jesus.**

God measures the future in ages! Countless ages will pile themselves one upon another throughout Eternity. For ages and ages and ages to come, God will exhibit for His own glory the body of Christ as a trophy of His grace.

Ephesians 3:21 KJV Unto him *be* glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

Through all the ages to come the *ekklesia* (the Church) will be a recognizable entity whose function is to give God Glory.

The following is excerpted from Lesson Appendix 7
"Ecstasy"
a prophecy given by Kenneth Copeland at the
1984 Southwest Believers' Convention

For these are the days of the greatest revelations of all. In the future, out in the distant ages that you know nothing of, I'll give you a glimpse of what it shall be like.

Never again, never in any age, never in the future again will there be the likes of you.

You will walk in the streets of the cities of the planets and the stars. I built the Universe for you, and you'll travel it with Me.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

And all of those that shall be born in the future and all the years to come, as natural men and natural women populate the stars, and they'll say to one another, "There comes one of the kings. There comes one of the special ones. There comes the image of the Master.

Oh! Would that we had lived in that age. They are so special. They get the best of everything. Their Father keeps them in His bosom.

Oh, we have it blessed, and we have it good, but it's because of them.

They walk in the Glory Realm.

The walk in the Light Realm.

We have Joy.

They have ecstasy!"

SESSION 12 CONTINUES IN LESSON 6

EPHESIANS

CHAPTER 2:8-18

New Creation | One New Man

SESSION 12 CONTINUES HERE

Ephesians 2:8-14 KJV

Eph. 2:8 For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: *it is* the gift of God:

I see grace as a great ocean above us, filled with every spiritual blessing. The conduit to that supply is faith. With our will, we can decide to exercise our faith. Every spiritual blessing God has is available to us. The only limit is our faith.

Eph. 2:9 Not of works, lest any man should boast.

Eph. 2:10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

Every one of us has a *derek*, a path, that God wants for us.

Eph. 2:11 ¶ Wherefore remember, that ye *being* in time past Gentiles in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision by that which is called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands;

Eph. 2:12 That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world:

There are three groups of people in the world: the Jews, the Nations, and the Church. In the Old Testament, there were only two groups: the Jews and the Nations (*goyin*), also translated "Gentiles." In that dispensation, only the Jews had a covenant with God.

Eph. 2:13 But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

Eph. 2:14 ¶ For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition *between us*;

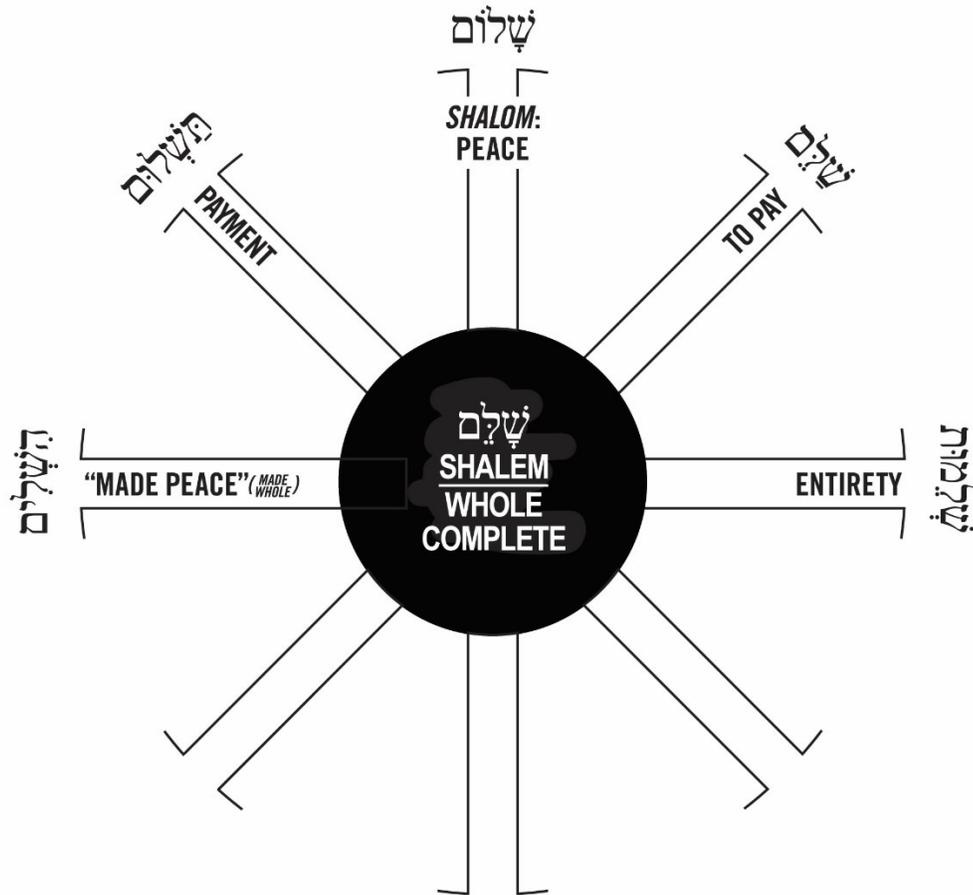
"hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us"

That is, the wall between the Jews and the Gentiles.

"for he is our peace"

John 14:27 KJV Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER



In Hebrew, *shalom* is the peace that comes from being whole (*shalem*). Man on his own is not whole, complete.

John 20:19-22 KJV

John 20:19 Then the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

John 20:20 And when he had so said, he shewed unto them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord.

John 20:21 Then said Jesus to them again, Peace be unto you: as my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

John 20:22 And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost:

Romans 5:1 KJV ¶ Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

We are one with God again. We are not broken off from Him.

Now let's go back to Ephesians 2.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Ephesians 2:13-18 KJV

Eph. 2:13 But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

Eph. 2:14 ¶ For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition *between us*;

Eph. 2:15 Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, *even* the law of commandments *contained* in ordinances; for to make in himself of twain one new man, *so* making peace;

Eph. 2:16 And that he might reconcile both [Jews and Gentiles] unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby:

Eph. 2:17 And came and preached peace to you which were afar off, and to them that were nigh.

Eph. 2:18 For through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father.

| This is not as some erroneously teach that one day in the future the Lord will bring all the Jews and the Body of Christ into one entity. This has already happened.

Three Groups of People

In the New Covenant, there are three groups of people.

1 Corinthians 10:32 KJV Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the church of God:

In the Old Testament there were only two groups.

The Jews

The Nations (*Goyim*)

Between these two groups was a wall of partition.

The third group—the *ekklesia*, the Church, the Body of Christ—was a hidden mystery.

Any Jew who is born again is now a member of this third group, the Body of Christ. And so it is with any Gentile who is born from above. Jews and Gentiles who have accepted Jesus Christ as Savior—who are born again—are now one.

Romans 16:25-26 KJV

Rom. 16:25 ¶ Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began,

| Nowhere in the Old Testament is there a revelation of the Church.

Rom. 16:26 But now is made manifest ...

| In Paul's day it was made manifest.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Ephesians 3:9 KJV And to make all *men* see what *is* the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ:

God kept the mystery of the Body of Christ a secret until it was revealed in the New Testament Epistles.

Colossians 1:26-27 KJV

Col. 1:26 *Even* the mystery which hath been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints:

Col. 1:27 To whom God would make known what *is* the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory:

But now in Him, any Jew and Gentile who accepts Him as Lord and Savior is instantly born again, born from above, and becomes a new species that never before existed.

The devil wants to keep you from knowing who you are in Christ.

2 Corinthians 5:17 KJV Therefore if any man *be* in Christ, *he is* a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.

2 Corinthians 5:17 AMPC Therefore if any person is [ingrafted] in Christ (the Messiah) he is a **new creation** (a new creature altogether); the old [previous moral and spiritual condition] has passed away. Behold, the fresh *and* new has come!

2 Corinthians 5:17 KJV Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a **new creation**. The old has passed away; behold, the new has come.

The born-again believer is a brand-new species that never before existed before Christ's completed work.

The Walls Came Down

For all Jews and Gentiles who have been born again into the Body of Christ:

There is no wall of separation between them. They are one.

We have peace with God.

There is wholeness in the Body.

They have been reconciled with God, through Christ.

Romans 5:1-2 KJV

Rom. 5:1 ¶ Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

Rom. 5:2 By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

Galatians 3:26-29 KJV

Gal. 3:26 For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Gal. 3:27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.

Gal. 3:28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

Gal. 3:29 And if ye *be* Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

A Heavenly Man

Born From Above

John 3:3-7 KJV

John 3:3 Jesus answered and said unto him, *Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.*

John 3:4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?

John 3:5 Jesus answered, *Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.*

John 3:6 *That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.*

John 3:7 *Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.*

"born again" (KJV)

Translated "from above" in the CEV and YLT.

Mounce Greek Dictionary

gk G540 | s G509 *ανωθεν* **anōthen** 13x

from above, from a higher place,

Jn. 3:31; of time, *from the first or beginning*, Acts 26:5; *from the source*, Lk. 1:33; *again, anew*, Jn. 3:3, 7; Gal. 4:9; with a prep., *the top or upper part*, Mt. 27:51 *again; from above.*

Strong's Greek

509. *ανωθεν* **anōthen**, *an'-o-then*; from 507; from above; by analogy, from the first; by implication, anew: — from above, again, from the beginning (very first), the top.

507. *ανω* **ano**, *an'-o*; adverb from 473; upward or on the top: — above, brim, high, up.

Now let's look at the same passage in the Amplified Classic.

John 3:3-7 AMPC

John 3:3 Jesus answered him, *I assure you, most solemnly I tell you, that unless a person is born again (anew, from above), he cannot ever see (know, be acquainted with, and experience) the kingdom of God.*

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

John 3:4 Nicodemus said to Him, How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter his mother's womb again and be born?

John 3:5 Jesus answered, **I assure you, most solemnly I tell you, unless a man is born of water and [even] the Spirit, he cannot [ever] enter the kingdom of God.**

John 3:6 **What is born of [from] the flesh is flesh [of the physical is physical]; and what is born of the Spirit is spirit.**

John 3:7 **Marvel not [do not be surprised, astonished] at My telling you, You must all be born anew (from above).**

When you are born again, born from above, you are a supernatural being walking on this Earth.

1 Corinthians 3:1-3 AMPC

1 Cor. 3:1 **HOWEVER, BRETHREN, I could not talk to you as to spiritual [men], but as to nonspiritual [men of the flesh, in whom the carnal nature predominates], as to mere infants [in the new life] in Christ [unable to talk yet!]**

1 Cor. 3:2 **I fed you with milk, not solid food, for you were not yet strong enough [to be ready for it]; but even yet you are not strong enough [to be ready for it],**

1 Cor. 3:3 **For you are still [unspiritual, having the nature] of the flesh [under the control of ordinary impulses]. For as long as [there are] envying and jealousy *and* wrangling and factions among you, are you not unspiritual *and* of the flesh, behaving yourselves after a human standard *and* like mere (unchanged) men?**

Believers are not supposed to be acting like "mere men." Paul says those who are engaging in envy, jealousy, wrangling, strife and division are not behaving as spiritual beings, but as carnal beings.

Place of Birth

Galatians 4:26 KJV But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.

Place of Citizenship

Philippians 3:20-21 KJV

Phil. 3:20 For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ:

Phil. 3:21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

"conversation"

This word (πολίτευμα = *politeuma*) is better translated as "citizenship," as in the Young's Literal Translation below.

Philippians 3:20 YLT For our citizenship is in the heavens, whence also a Saviour we await — the Lord Jesus Christ

Heavenly Jerusalem is the seat of our government, the place where we do business with God now.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

That is what we have been studying in Ephesians 1:17–2:6.

We have been raised with Him.

We have been seated with Him.

We share throne rights.

We have a heavenly ministry, to take the authority over things here on Earth.
Each of us must sit in our chair of authority every day.

Hebrews 12:18–25 KJV

Heb. 12:18 For ye are not come unto the mount that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor unto blackness, and darkness, and tempest,

Heb. 12:19 And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words; which voice they that heard intreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more:

Heb. 12:20 (For they could not endure that which was commanded, And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart:

Heb. 12:21 And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake:)

The writer of Hebrews (a letter directed to Jewish followers of Christ) is trying to set them straight about which covenant they are now to operate under. They are now no longer under the Old Covenant instituted by Moses.

Heb. 12:22 But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,

Heb. 12:23 To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect,

Heb. 12:24 And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.

Heb. 12:25 See that ye refuse not him that speaketh. For if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven:

All those who have been born again, including those who came to Christ from Judaism, are operating from a place in the Heavenly Jerusalem. They are doing business with God himself. This is made possible through the blood of the New Covenant.

Our Eternal Home

Hebrews 13:14 KJV For here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come.

Here on Earth, cities come and go. Kingdoms rise and fall. The ground is full of the ruins of powerful once-great cities that dazzled the world in their heyday. In many cases, all that remains is ashes and rubble. Our city—our home—is in a city that will never end.

NEW JERUSALEM, HOME OF THE BRIDE

(Excerpted From 3BI Class Manual: The Book of Revelation)

My dear friend and mentor, Dr. Hilton Sutton did not see that the Church is the Bride of Christ (although you can see from this syllabus how much we agreed on).

He saw the New Jerusalem as the Bride based on the following:

Revelation 21:9-10 ASV

Rev. 21:9 ¶ And there came one of the seven angels who had the seven bowls, who were laden with the seven last plagues; and he spake with me, saying, Come hither, I will show thee the bride, the wife of the Lamb.

Rev. 21:10 And he carried me away in the Spirit to a mountain great and high, and showed me the holy city Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God,

This is a Hebrew Idiom. For instance, when one says “Israel,” it can mean either of two things, or both of them together: the Land, or the people, or both. They go together.

Consider these examples:

Matthew 3:4-5 KJV

Matt. 3:4 And the same John had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his meat was locusts and wild honey.

Matt. 3:5 Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judaea, and all the region round about Jordan,

The city of Jerusalem and its buildings did not go out to see John. The people did.

Jerusalem can mean the city, or the people of the city.

Matthew 23:37 KJV O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *thou* that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee . . .

The city and its buildings did not kill the prophets. The people did.

Throughout the Bible when Jerusalem is named, it can mean the city, or it can mean its people. Or it can mean both together.

It is the same with Heavenly Jerusalem.

We were born there (Galatians 4:23-26). We are born from above (John 3:3 AMPC, YLT).

We are citizens of Heaven right now (Philippians 3:20 ASV).

Our minds and affections are to be placed there (Colossians 3:1-4).

We are seated there now; from there we are to rule and reign now (Ephesians 2:4-7; Romans 5:17).

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Heavenly Jerusalem is *The Place* He prepared for His Bride (John 14:2-3). *The Place* (*Ha Makom* in Hebrew) has special meaning. Too much to go into here. It is covered in detail in previous 3BI courses.

But to appreciate earthly Jerusalem being *The Place* of Israel, and of Heavenly Jerusalem being *The Place* that Jesus prepared for His Bride, you can get my teaching on this wonderful truth: *Ha Makom*.⁵⁵ This teaching is found in the minibook *Jerusalem Above and Below*, by Dr. Billye Brim.

In Heaven! Experiencing The Throne of God
Testimony of Dean Braxton

I must let everyone know that I was sent back to do the same thing that all of us that accept Jesus into our lives as Lord and Savior, are supposed to do. That is to tell people about Jesus and how He loves them and has a place for them for all of eternity.⁵⁶

We Are Just Passing Through

When I was there, I knew that I was just passing through down here on earth. It was great to really know that this [earth] was not my home. I have always felt that this was not my home, but when I was there, I knew without a doubt that I was just passing through.

Jesus wants me to make sure when I tell my story, that everyone I talk to knows that this is not our home and we who know Jesus as Lord and Savior, are just passing through. Earth is the minority compared to heaven, where the Father God and Jesus are, and the home of the Holy Spirit. It seemed to me that this earth was just a small part of the big picture, a very small part. But we seem to think and act as if this is only it.

This Earth Is Not Our Home

We are ambassadors here, we who know Jesus as Lord and Savior. Most of us agree with that, but do not feel that way here. We act as if this is our home forever, yet Jesus told us that He goes to prepare a place for us. . . . a place in heaven just for us.
 . . .

My Grandmother Mary wanted me to get this across to other family members here on earth. This was a great desire of . . . all of God's creation. . . . God Himself, wants us to know this is not our home and we are only passing through. We will outlast every problem we have.⁵⁷

SESSION 12 ENDS HERE

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

⁵⁵ Billye Brim, *The Book of Revelation*, 3BI Course, Session 16, Chapter 19, 4-5.

⁵⁶ Dean Braxton, *In Heaven! Experiencing The Throne of God, The Testimony of Dean Braxton* (Maitland, FL: Xulon Press, 2009), 23.

⁵⁷ Braxton, 150-151.

EPHESIANS

CHAPTER 2:19-3:21

One Body, a Temple

SESSION 13 STARTS HERE

In the Book of Ephesians, Paul has presented us as the Body of Christ, with Christ himself as the Head of the Body. The Head relies on the Body to accomplish His will here on Earth. God has chosen to work through the Body.

Paul also describes us as a temple.

You Are the Temple

Ephesians 2:19-22 KJV

Eph. 2:19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God;

Eph. 2:20 And are built upon the foundation [*themelios*] of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner *stone*;

“*foundation*”

θεμέλιος = *themélios* = *them-el'-ee-os* = foundation, like the foundation of a building.

Eph. 2:21 In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto **an holy temple** in the Lord:

Eph. 2:22 In whom ye also are builded together for **an habitation of God through the Spirit**.

God has put us together for a purpose. We are the very temple of God, a place in which He has chosen to dwell.

“*temple*”

In most English translations, the word “temple” is used to translate two different Greek words: **ναός** (*naos*) and **ἱερόν** (*hieron*). Thayer, in his *Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament*, explains the difference between the two words.

ναός, ναοῦ, ὁ (*ναίω* to dwell), the Septuagint for **הַיְכָל**, used of the temple at Jerusalem, but only of the sacred edifice (or sanctuary) itself, consisting of the Holy place and the Holy of holies (in classical Greek used of the sanctuary or cell of a temple, where the image of the god was placed, called also **δόμος, σηκός**, which is to be distinguished from **τό ἱερόν**, the

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

whole temple, the entire consecrated enclosure; this distinction is observed also in the Bible.⁵⁸



Figure 4: First-century Temple in Jerusalem (from the Holy Land Model of Jerusalem). This complex is what the New Testament writers refer to when they use the word **ἱερόν** (hieron). That term includes the colonnaded porticos, courtyards, stairways, storage rooms, etc. The word **ναός** (naos), by contrast, was used only of the innermost chambers (the Holy Place and the Holy of Holies) of the Temple building itself. This view is looking from the east. The large open space is the Court of the Gentiles. This is as far as non-Jews were allowed to go. Photo: Gerd Eichmann via wikimedia.org. <https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-sa/4.0/deed.en>

1 Corinthians 3:16 KJV ¶ Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and *that* the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

The first few verses in this chapter (see especially verse 9) make it clear that Paul is telling the Corinthian church that they, collectively, are the Temple of God.

1 Corinthians 6:19-20 KJV

1 Cor. 6:19 What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost *which is* in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?

1 Cor. 6:20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.

In these verses, Paul emphasizes that each individual believer is the Temple of the Holy Spirit. See especially verse 18: "Flee fornication."

2 Corinthians 6:16 KJV And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in *them*; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

⁵⁸ Joseph Henry Thayer, *Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament* (New York: Harper & Brothers, 1889), 422.

Excerpted from Lesson Appendix 4

KENNETH E. HAGIN PRAYER SEMINAR 4/28/1983 PM

“Word of Wisdom: Word of Knowledge of What the Holy Ghost Is Saying”

But here's what the Holy Ghost -- do you want to know what the Holy Ghost is saying? I'll tell you what the Holy Ghost is saying.

In this move that is about to come—and even you're in the edge of it right now—it will not be altogether something new that you've never seen. It'll be a combination of everything you've seen put together and then plus a little bit more.

In this move of God that is just about to spring upon you, there will be a manifestation of casting out demons that you haven't seen yet.

Now some have drawn back from casting out demons. And the Spirit of God said, "I began a move along that line a few years ago, and men aborted the move. They mixed some of their own thinking in on it, and they tried to control it and do it according to pattern and according to the way that we think it ought to be done."

But you haven't seen anything yet of what you're going to see in dealing with demons. For demons are let loose upon the earth. They're going about as never before because they know their time is short!

And so, in this multiplication, this advance of demon activity there will be the activity of the Holy Ghost. Demons that have harassed men, demons that have held ministries in check [hallelujah] will leave.

And you have not seen yet what you will see in the area of dealing with demons, casting out demons, exercising authority over demons. And we're about to step into it, like you'd step through a door into another room.

And secondly, saith the Spirit of God, "You have not seen the revival of divine healing that you're about to see."

Oh yes you saw those that I raised up. You've seen men and women, mightily used of My Spirit. I sent them forth as a pilot program to try to train you. But many just looked at them and lifted them up, and some of them were lifted up in pride, and the anointing left them. And some became money-minded and lost the anointing.

But there will arise a group in this day that's a brand-new breed. They'll not be greedy of filthy lucre. They'll not be wanting to attract attention unto themselves. They would care less whether God uses me. They'd rather God would use you.

And God will not just use ministers; He'll use laymen. And there'll be a revival of divine healing such as you have not seen in your lifetime, or read about, or heard about, saith the Lord!

And a revival of the supernatural, not only the supernatural in casting out devils. Not only the supernatural in healing the sick. Not only the supernatural in speaking with other tongues. But the supernatural in the realm of the seen realm.

Men will see the glory of God; a cloud will hang over certain congregations, even the church building for days at the time. And everybody that passes by, sinner and saint alike, will say, "Well, what in the world is that? I've never seen anything like that."

And there will be in other places, there will be in other places fire of the Spirit that will actually become literal. Oh, yes, in the spirit realm, some of us have seen it. In the spirit realm, we've been conscious of the fire of God. But the fire will actually

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

come into manifestation. And there'll be people, sinners as well as saints, that will see fire all over the heads of the people.

There'll be people driving down the street or down the highway and they'll see fire on top of the buildings. And they'll come and say, "What does all this mean?"

But, you see, the Lord will use signs of His presence to bring people, in the last days, into the fullness of His Spirit, and into full salvation.

And signs, signs! What kinds of signs?

Miraculous things in the realm of the Spirit! And then they'll be manifested in the realm of the physical. And the glory of God will fall. And the power of God will be in manifestation. And men will—and women too—will even be transported like Philip was and found in another place.

...

But the greatest miracle of all is that there'll be so many fish caught in the net that the nets can't hold them. There won't be church houses enough to hold the people. Amen, Amen. For the purpose of it all is that you may be fishers of men.

...

Quit fishing in your own bathtub. There's not any fish in your own bathtub. Go out where the fishes are and throw out the net. Not the hook. The NET! And pull it in. Hallelujah. And bring them in.

And the glory of the Lord shall shine. And the end time shall come. And you'll stand in the place. Yes, many of you that stand here including myself, will stand in the place of ministry that you've not stood in before.

And will stand in the place that's been ordained for you from the foundation of the earth! Hallelujah. Hallelujah.

And if it could be told you. If we were able to tell you in human language that which will transpire in some of your lives—and some of our lives who are here just now—your mind would not be able to comprehend it. As you say speaking in the human vernacular, it would almost blow your mind.

But you'll see it! You'll rejoice in it! You'll be glad of it!

It's out there, just a little ways in front of you. Be faithful, be joyous, and rejoice in the Lord always. And He'll bring it to pass.

The Glory

The glory of God is the presence of God.

Romans 8:11 KJV But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

Romans 6:4 KJV Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life.

The Word “glory”

Strong’s H3519

כְּבוֹד **kâbôwd**, *kaw-bode’*; rarely כְּבֹד **kâbôd**, *kaw-bode’*; from *H3513; properly *weight*; but only figuratively in a good sense, *splendor* or *copiousness*: - glorious (-ly), glory, honour (-able).

*The Root: Strong’s H3513

כָּבַד **kâbad**, *kaw-bad’*; or כִּבֵּד **kâbêd** *kaw-bade’*; a primitive root; *to be heavy*, that is, in a bad sense (*burdensome, severe, dull*) or in a good sense (*numerous, rich, honorable*); causatively *to make weighty* (in the same two senses).

The Crowning of Man

Psalm 8:3–7 KJV

Psa. 8:3 ¶ When I consider thy heavens, the work of thy fingers, the moon and the stars, which thou hast ordained;

Psa. 8:4 What is man, that thou art mindful of him? and the son of man, that thou visitest him?

Psa. 8:5 For thou hast made him a little lower than the angels, **and hast crowned him with glory** and honour.

Psa. 8:6 Thou madest him to have dominion over the works of thy hands; thou hast put all *things* under his feet:

Psa. 8:7 All sheep and oxen, yea, and the beasts of the field;

Man was crowned with the Glory, the presence of God.

He was not naked. The Glory sat upon him: covered him: clothed him.

Dean Braxton, *In Heaven!*

My family members in heaven and others who had been human beings here on earth were shining and had pure joy. They shine with the glory of God. This shine looked like a long robe but it was the glory of Jesus coming out of the beings. That is the only reason they are shining. It is Jesus’ brightness shining out of them that makes it look like a robe. It moves as if the wind is blowing it all the time, because it is the glory of Jesus and His glory is alive.⁵⁹

That’s what Adam was like before the Fall. He and Eve were not naked; they were clothed with the glory of God. You can just imagine the glory of God covering them like a flowing robe.

When they fell, they instantly knew they were naked; the glory that once clothed them had departed from them.

⁵⁹ Dean Braxton, *In Heaven! Experiencing The Throne of God, The Testimony of Dean Braxton* (Maitland, FL: Xulon Press, 2009), 145.

The Fall

In his fallen state, man is separated from the Glory. Man is separated from God.

Romans 3:23 KJV For all have sinned, and come **short of the glory** of God;

These are perhaps the saddest words in the Bible.

Genesis 3:8, 10 KJV

Gen. 3:8 And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves **from the presence** of the Lord God amongst the trees of the garden.

Gen. 3:10 And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I *was* naked; and I hid myself.

God went on to ask who told them they were naked. The truth is that they didn't *need* anybody to tell them. They knew when the Glory left.

Reentry of the Glory

Man and God were separated. Man cannot stand the presence of God. But God has a plan for the Glory to reenter the Earth.

The Glory in a Bush

Exodus 3:1-5 KJV

Ex. 3:1 ¶ Now Moses kept the flock of Jethro his father-in-law, the priest of Midian: and he led the flock to the backside of the desert, and came to the mountain of God, *even* to Horeb.

Ex. 3:2 And the angel of the LORD appeared unto him in a flame of fire out of the midst of a bush: and he looked, and, behold, the bush burned with fire, and the bush *was* not consumed.

God wants to get close to His people once again, and He has a place to do it. So He cleans himself out a little spot in a bush and manifests His glory there. He manifests himself as fire. From that holy ground spot, God tells Moses to remove his shoes.

Ex. 3:3 And Moses said, I will now turn aside, and see this great sight, why the bush is not burnt.

Ex. 3:4 And when the LORD saw that he turned aside to see, God called unto him out of the midst of the bush, and said, Moses, Moses. And he said, Here am I.

Ex. 3:5 And he said, Draw not nigh hither: put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest is holy ground.

“holy”

This is the first mention in the Bible of the word “holy.”

It is interesting to note that, here and elsewhere, the glory of the Lord can be seen. There is a physical manifestation. See in Exodus 16:10 below.

The Glory in a Cloud

Exodus 16:6-7, 10 KJV

Ex. 16:6 And Moses and Aaron said unto all the children of Israel, At even, then ye shall know that the LORD hath brought you out from the land of Egypt:

Ex. 16:7 And in the morning, then ye shall see the glory of the LORD; for that he heareth your murmurings against the LORD: and what are we, that ye murmur against us?

Ex. 16:10 And it came to pass, as Aaron spake unto the whole congregation of the children of Israel, that they looked toward the wilderness, and, behold, **the glory of the LORD** appeared in the cloud.

The Glory on the Mount

Exodus 19:5-6, 9, 16-20 KJV

Ex. 19:5 Now therefore, if ye will obey my voice indeed, and keep my covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people: for all the earth is mine:

Ex. 19:6 And ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and an holy nation. These are the words which thou shalt speak unto the children of Israel.

Ex. 19:9 And the Lord said unto Moses, Lo, I come unto thee in a thick cloud, that the people may hear when I speak with thee, and believe thee for ever. And Moses told the words of the people unto the Lord.

Ex. 19:16 And it came to pass on the third day in the morning, that there were thunders and lightnings, and a thick cloud upon the mount, and the voice of the trumpet exceeding loud; so that all the people that was in the camp trembled.

Ex. 19:17 And Moses brought forth the people out of the camp to meet with God; and they stood at the nether part of the mount.

Ex. 19:18 And mount Sinai was altogether on a smoke, because the Lord descended upon it in fire: and the smoke thereof ascended as the smoke of a furnace, and the whole mount quaked greatly.

Ex. 19:19 And when the voice of the trumpet sounded long, and waxed louder and louder, Moses spake, and God answered him by a voice.

Ex. 19:20 And the Lord came down upon mount Sinai, on the top of the mount: and the Lord called Moses up to the top of the mount; and Moses went up.

Exodus 20 tells of God giving Moses the Ten Commandments.

Exodus 20:18 KJV And all the people saw the thunderings, and the lightnings, and the noise of the trumpet, and the mountain smoking: and **when the people saw it**, they removed, and stood afar off.

 | The people saw the glory of the Lord in the lightning and smoke and heard the thunder and the shofar.

Exodus 24:15-18 KJV

Ex. 24:15 And Moses went up into the mount, and a cloud covered the mount.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Ex. 24:16 And the glory of the Lord abode upon mount Sinai, and the cloud covered it six days: and the seventh day he called unto Moses out of the midst of the cloud.

Ex. 24:17 And the sight of the glory of the Lord was like devouring fire on the top of the mount in the eyes of the children of Israel.

Ex. 24:18 And Moses went into the midst of the cloud, and gat him up into the mount: and Moses was in the mount forty days and forty nights.

During the forty days Moses was on Mount Sinai, the Lord told him to speak to the people about taking an offering.

Exodus 25:1-9 KJV

Ex. 25:1 ¶ And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying,

Ex. 25:2 Speak unto the children of Israel, that they bring me an offering: of every man that giveth it willingly with his heart ye shall take my offering.

Ex. 25:3 And this *is* the offering which ye shall take of them; gold, and silver, and brass,

Ex. 25:4 And blue, and purple, and scarlet, and fine linen, and goats' *hair*,

Ex. 25:5 And rams' skins dyed red, and badgers' skins, and shittim wood,

Ex. 25:6 Oil for the light, spices for anointing oil, and for sweet incense,

Ex. 25:7 Onyx stones, and stones to be set in the ephod, and in the breastplate.

| The offering the people were to give was for a specific purpose: the building of a sanctuary.

Ex. 25:8 And let them make me a sanctuary; that I may dwell among them.

| And here was the purpose for the sanctuary. God would have them construct a place where He could dwell among His people. God wanted to get as close to His people as He could.

Ex. 25:9 According to all that I shew thee, *after* the pattern of the tabernacle, and the pattern of all the instruments thereof, even so shall ye make *it*.

| They were to build the Tabernacle according to a specific pattern the Lord would give Moses.

The Glory in the Tabernacle***According to the Pattern******Moses the Builder***

Exodus 25:40 KJV And look that thou make *them* after their pattern, which was shewed thee in the mount

Exodus 40:33-35 KJV

Ex. 40:33 ... So Moses finished the work.

Ex. 40:34 ¶ Then a cloud covered the tent of the congregation, and the glory of the Lord filled the tabernacle.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Ex. 40:35 And Moses was not able to enter into the tent of the congregation, because the cloud abode thereon, and **the glory of the Lord filled the tabernacle.**

The Glory in the Temple

According to the Pattern Shown to David

1 Chronicles 28:11-12, 19 KJV

1 Chr. 28:11 ¶ Then David gave to Solomon his son the pattern of the porch, and of the houses thereof, and of the treasuries thereof, and of the upper chambers thereof, and of the inner parlours thereof, and of the place of the mercy seat,

1 Chr. 28:12 And the pattern of all that he had by the spirit ...

1 Chr. 28:19 All *this, said David*, the Lord made me understand in writing by *his* hand upon me, *even* all the works of this pattern.

| The Spirit of God came upon David, and he drew the pattern.

Solomon the Builder

2 Chronicles 5:1-3 KJV

2 Chron. 5:1 ¶ Thus all the work that Solomon made for the house of the LORD was finished: and Solomon brought in all the things that David his father had dedicated; and the silver, and the gold, and all the instruments, put he among the treasures of the house of God.

2 Chron. 5:2 Then Solomon assembled the elders of Israel, and all the heads of the tribes, the chief of the fathers of the children of Israel, unto Jerusalem, to bring up the ark of the covenant of the LORD out of the city of David, which is Zion.

2 Chron. 5:3 Wherefore all the men of Israel assembled themselves unto the king in the feast which was in the seventh month.

| ***“the feast which was in the seventh month”***

| The Feast of Tabernacles

2 Chronicles 5:11-14 KJV

2 Chr. 5:11 And it came to pass, when the priests were come out of the holy place: (for all the priests that were present were sanctified, and did not then wait by course:

2 Chr. 5:12 Also the Levites which were the singers, all of them of Asaph, of Heman, of Jeduthun, with their sons and their brethren, being arrayed in white linen, having cymbals and psalteries and harps, stood at the east end of the altar, and with them an hundred and twenty priests sounding with trumpets:)

2 Chr. 5:13 It came even to pass, as the trumpeters and singers *were* as one, to make one sound to be heard in praising and thanking the LORD; and when they lifted up *their* voice with the trumpets and cymbals and instruments of musick, and praised the LORD, *saying*, For *he is* good; for his mercy *endureth* for ever: that *then* **the house was filled with a cloud**, *even* the house of the LORD;

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Verse 13 includes an expression of praise that was frequently spoken and sung by the Jews.

For he is good; for his mercy endures for ever.

כִּי טוֹב כִּי לְעוֹלָם חַסְדּוֹ

Hallelujah! Kee tov! Kee l^eolam chasdoh!

kee tov = for/because (He is) good

kee = for/because

l^eolam = from now to the end of time (forever)

chasdoh = from chesed (obligatory covenantal love)

2 Chr. 5:14 So that the priests could not stand to minister by reason of the cloud: for **the glory of the LORD had filled the house of God.**

| The pattern was given. The work was finished. The glory of the Lord filled it.

The Glorious Church—The Temple

God wanted more than a Temple on a hill. He wants to get into a Temple that can move and walk. He wants to go with us.

According To Pattern: The Image of Christ

The Holy Spirit the Builder

Ephesians 2:21–22 KJV

Eph. 2:21 In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto **an holy temple** in the Lord:

Eph. 2:22 In whom ye also are builded together for **an habitation of God through the Spirit.**

1 Corinthians 3:16 KJV ¶ Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and **that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?**

1 Corinthians 6:19–20 KJV

1 Cor. 6:19 What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost *which is* in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?

1 Cor. 6:20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore **glorify God in your body,** and in your spirit, which are God's.

2 Corinthians 6:16 And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in *them*; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

Jesus Christ is the Pattern. The Holy Spirit is the Builder

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

2 Corinthians 3:18 But we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, *even* as by the Spirit of the Lord.

Ephesians 2:20-22 KJV

Eph. 2:20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone;

Eph. 2:21 In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord:

Eph. 2:22 In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

For This Cause I Pray**Ephesians 3:1-21 KJV**

Eph. 3:1 ¶ **For this cause** I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles,

Eph. 3:2 If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God which is given me to you-ward:

Eph. 3:3 How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery; (as I wrote afore in few words,

Eph. 3:4 Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ)

Eph. 3:5 Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit;

Eph. 3:6 That the Gentiles should be fellowheirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the gospel:

Eph. 3:7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me by the effectual working of his power.

Eph. 3:8 Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ;

Eph. 3:9 And to make all *men* see what *is* the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ:

Eph. 3:10 To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly *places* might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God,

Eph. 3:11 According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord:

Eph. 3:12 In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him.

Eph. 3:13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory.

Eph. 3:14 ¶ **For this cause** I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,

Eph. 3:15 Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named,

Eph. 3:16 That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man;

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Eph. 3:17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love,

Eph. 3:18 May be able to comprehend with all saints what *is* the breadth, and length, and depth, and height;

Eph. 3:19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, **that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.**

Eph. 3:20 Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us,

Eph. 3:21 Unto him *be* glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

SESSION 13 ENDS HERE

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

EPHESIANS

SESSION 14

Walking Out New Testament Realities: Part 4

SESSION 14 STARTS HERE

I. A look at the word “saint”

- A. It comes from the same word as “holy”
- B. It also means “separated”

Exodus 3:1–5 KJV

Ex. 3:1 ¶ Now Moses kept the flock of Jethro his father in law, the priest of Midian: and he led the flock to the backside of the desert, and came to the mountain of God, *even* to Horeb.

Ex. 3:2 And the angel of the LORD appeared unto him in a flame of fire out of the midst of a bush: and he looked, and, behold, the bush burned with fire, and the bush *was* not consumed.

Ex. 3:3 And Moses said, I will now turn aside, and see this great sight, why the bush is not burnt.

Ex. 3:4 And when the LORD saw that he turned aside to see, God called unto him out of the midst of the bush, and said, Moses, Moses. And he said, Here *am* I.

Ex. 3:5 And he said, Draw not nigh hither: put off thy shoes from off thy feet, for the place whereon thou standest *is* holy ground.

- C. **Exodus 3:5** is the first place in which the word “holy” is used (mentioned)

1. The “law of first mention” means that the first time a word is used, its definition and dynamic are set, and it carries those elements of meaning wherever you find it
2. This is the story of the angel of the Lord appearing to Moses in a burning bush
3. The Lord told Moses that the ground on which he was standing was holy
4. In this passage, the word “holy” is the word “separated”
5. The Lord had separated a piece of ground on which He could manifest himself

Ephesians 1:4 KJV According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:

- D. **Ephesians 1:4** is the first place in which the word “holy” is used in the Book of Ephesians
 1. “Foundation of the world” is “*katabolē*”

2. He chose us before the foundation of the world to be holy—separated
- E. Just as God separated a piece of real estate for the burning bush, He separated the Body of Christ unto himself

Ephesians 1:15 KJV Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints

- F. **Ephesians 1:15** speaks of love unto **all** the saints

Ephesians 1:13 KJV In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise

- G. **Ephesians 1:13** We were sealed with the “holy” or “separated” Spirit
 1. **1 Corinthians 2:12** says we haven’t received the spirit of the world, but a separated Spirit
 2. We are sealed with the third person of the Godhead

Ephesians 1:18 KJV The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints

- H. **Ephesians 1:18**
 1. We separated believers have this treasure called God’s inheritance
 2. The treasure resides in separated vessels

Ephesians 2:19–21 KJV

Eph. 2:19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God;

Eph. 2:20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner *stone*;

Eph. 2:21 In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord:

- I. **Ephesians 2:19, 21**
 1. We don’t let any worry in our temple
 2. We don’t tolerate sickness or disease in this holy temple
 3. “... what fellowship hath light with darkness?” (2 Corinthians 6:14)

Ephesians 3:5 KJV Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit

- J. **Ephesians 3:5**—The Holy Spirit separated the holy apostles

Ephesians 3:8 KJV Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ

- K. **Ephesians 3:8**

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

1. In humility, Paul counted himself as one of the least of all of the separated ones
2. He considered it a privilege to teach the unsearchable riches of Christ

Ephesians 3:18–19 KJV

Eph. 3:18 May be able to comprehend with all saints what *is* the breadth, and length, and depth, and height;

Eph. 3:19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.

L. Ephesians 3:18–19

1. Paul is praying for ALL of the saints to know the love of Christ
2. In order that we may be filled with the richest divine measure of the fullness of God
3. He's not holding back one degree of Who He is in filling this temple

Ephesians 4:11–12 KJV

Eph. 4:11 And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers;

Eph. 4:12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

M. Ephesians 4:11–12

1. Saints need to be perfected
2. When they get born again, they're newborn babies
3. Perfection means maturity and growth

Ephesians 4:30 KJV And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

N. Ephesians 4:30—It's good to have a heart-cry of hunger to know the Holy Ghost better

II. A story about knowing the Holy Spirit

- A. Brother Kenneth E. Hagin used to comment that some believers wouldn't know the Holy Ghost if He came down the aisle with a red hat on
- B. That became significant to Chip Brim (Shelli's younger brother and a minister of the gospel) one time when he was asked to minister in some meetings in Vermont
 1. This area was known for occult and witchcraft practices
 2. The crowd was very hard and unyielding
 3. Chip was new in the ministry
- C. Chip was attempting to teach the people about rejoicing
 1. The people's only response was to fold their arms
 2. The darkness in the area seemed to infiltrate the service
 3. Chip was about to quit and leave the area

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- D. A woman with a big red hat with a big feather came to the meeting that night and sat on the front row
 - 1. As Chip walked past her while ministering, the feather would move as if following him
 - 2. She had her eyes closed and was praying quietly in other tongues
 - a. If he walked to the right, her extended hand would move to the right while she prayed
 - b. If he walked to the left, her hand would move to the left
 - 3. Power was emanating from her as she prayed
 - 4. Breakthrough came to the meeting
 - a. People were rejoicing
 - b. Miracles and demonstrations of the Holy Ghost were occurring
 - c. Pastors who had been divided were united
 - i. They were hugging each other
 - ii. They began to invite each other to minister at their churches
 - iii. They were exchanging watches
 - 5. Chip stood up on a chair and watched God be God
 - 6. Chip knew that the results has come from the red-hat lady being obedient to the Holy Spirit and knowing Him intimately
 - a. She was obedient to sit on the front row
 - b. She heard the Holy Spirit telling her to go to the meeting
 - c. She was willing to travel over 100 miles to be there
- E. May we be at the right place and time doing the right thing
- F. May we do the Lord's will even if it's wearing a big red hat

III. Another example of an obedient servant

- A. Miss Shelli was traveling with Dr. Billye Brim on a ministry tour in France
 - 1. It was during a time of religious persecution by the French government
 - 2. The pastors had been feeling the resulting oppression
- B. They were flying from one place to another inside of France
- C. As they boarded the plane, they saw a beautifully-dressed black man in his seat
 - 1. He had a two-toned suit of the finest fabric
 - a. One entire side was red
 - b. The other entire side was yellow
 - 2. On his back were embroidered English letters that said, "Trust and obey"
 - 3. He had an extra-large Gucci bag
 - a. It was also red and yellow
 - b. It was made of gorgeous leather
 - c. It was gold-trimmed
 - 4. He had Gucci slip-on shoes—one red and one yellow

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- D. He was quite noticeable in a place where most people were wearing black
 - E. As he ordered hot tea, the stewardesses were whispering about his apparel
 - F. The stewardesses asked him what he was doing
 - 1. They were still on the ground
 - 2. He already had his pen out, writing
 - 3. He said in his deep “Lou Rawls” voice, “I’m writing love songs to God”
 - G. Mechanical difficulties made it necessary for everyone to disembark from the plane
 - H. Miss Shelli and Dr. Billye took the opportunity to get to know this man
 - I. His name was Jimmy McKissic
 - 1. He was from Arkansas
 - 2. He was an accomplished pianist
 - a. He gave Miss Shelli and Dr. Billye tickets to Carnegie Hall to come and listen to him
 - b. He was on his way to play at a rich resort off the coast of France
 - c. There was to be a gathering of American filmmakers there
 - 3. He spoke of the people who would be listening to his music
 - a. As he played his love songs to God, the people would gather around his piano
 - b. The Holy Spirit would move on their hearts, and they would begin to weep
 - c. Then Jimmy would introduce them to His Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ
 - 4. He said there were many well-known people “in the biz” that he had led to the Lord
 - 5. He shared that his reason for dressing the way he did was that the Lord had told him to one day in prayer
 - a. He said he must just simply trust and obey
 - b. He knew that God’s thoughts and ways are higher than his
 - c. He understood that people are attracted to those colors, even if they didn’t particularly like them
 - 6. Jimmy was a very humble man
 - 7. When they got back on the plane, the stewardesses were very attentive to him
 - a. He was talking to them and leading them to the Lord
 - b. The evangelistic anointing was working
 - J. There’s reward for being in constant fellowship with the Lord
 - 1. His presence in our lives will match the level of our separation to Him
 - 2. He is willing to give us more than our hearts are crying out for
-

Ephesians 5:1–4 KJV

Eph. 5:1 ¶ Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children;

Eph. 5:2 And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweetsmelling savour.

Eph. 5:3 ¶ But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints;

Eph. 5:4 Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks.

- IV. **Ephesians 5:1–2** And walk in love ...
 - A. This “walk” in verse 2 is “*halacha*”
 - B. We walk in love—we have to walk it out
- V. **Ephesians 5:3** But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints ...—the saints are to be separated from these things
- VI. **Ephesians 5:4** Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks.
 - A. The Lord has provided His blood to wash us from all these things
 - B. When we believe in the power of the blood of Jesus, we know that the Father receives our sincere repentance
 - C. Then we’re able to stand before the Father clean and separated unto Him

Ephesians 5:21–25 KJV

Eph. 5:21 ¶ Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God.

Eph. 5:22 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord.

Eph. 5:23 For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body.

Eph. 5:24 Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so *let* the wives *be* to their own husbands in every thing.

Eph. 5:25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it;

- VII. **Ephesians 5:22** Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord.
 - A. The governing principle here is “as unto the Lord”
 - B. If your husband wants you to do something that’s “of the darkness,” you don’t have to submit to it
 - C. If you can’t see Jesus doing it, you don’t have to submit to it
- VIII. **Ephesians 5:23** For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church ...
 - A. He’s writing to born-again people with new-creature qualities
 - B. Christ is the head of every person in the Body of Christ
 - 1. There are spirits that live in female bodies
 - 2. The spirits themselves are neither male nor female (Galatians 3:28)

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- IX. Ephesians 5:24** Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing.
- A. Jesus is the Head of the Church
 - B. Anything with two heads is a freak
 - C. In our homes, the husband is anointed to be head: to make decisions as in the Lord
 1. If he's not in fellowship with the Lord, he doesn't qualify to be the head
 2. God is light, and there is no darkness in Him
 - a. God would not have a woman yield to a man who was not in fellowship with Him
 - b. The holy, separated men of God who were used to write down the Scriptures would not have a woman yield to a man who was not in fellowship with God, light, and love
- X. Ephesians 5:25** Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it
- A. These husbands had the God-kind-of-love in their hearts
 - B. Romans 5:5 says, "The love of God is shed abroad in your heart."
 - C. Being in the Lord gave them the capacity to fulfill this verse
 - D. The Anointed One has anointed husbands to love as He does
 - E. It's as if the husband and wife have each received a sealed envelope
 1. The wife's envelope says (verse 22), "Submit to your husband"
 2. The husband's envelope says (verse 25), "Love your wife as Christ loved the Church."
 3. The wife is the only one who could read her envelope's contents (even her husband couldn't)
 4. The husband is the only one who can read that which is in his envelope
 - a. He doesn't know what's in her letter
 - b. He can't say, "Submit to me, woman," because he doesn't know her letter says that
 - c. He is only responsible for loving her as Christ loved the Church
 5. The wife can't demand that her husband love her because she doesn't know what's in his envelope
 - a. She must submit
 - b. Submission is a willingness to yield to reason
 - c. The yielding originates from within, not from outside pressure
 - F. Sarah told Abraham that Ishmael was going to have to get out of their home
 1. Ishmael had been mocking Isaac
 2. Sarah didn't want strife in her household
 3. Abraham didn't want to send Ishmael away
 4. The Lord told Abraham to listen to Sarah

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

5. This shows us that the Lord isn't a respecter of persons
6. In the covenant of marriage, both spouses have a voice
- G. When God created the woman (Genesis 2:18), He called her a "help" (not a "helpmeet")
 1. This word "help" has the same root as the word used in Psalm 54:4 "the Lord is my helper"
 2. He's an ever-present help
- H. Adam needed a help
 1. God provided what he needed
 2. He formed Adam, but built the woman
 3. The Jewish sages say that God's work is always from one degree of glory to the next higher degree
 - a. When He formed Adam out of the dust of the earth, that was glory
 - b. When He built the woman, that was a higher degree of glory
- I. God presented a grown woman to Adam not a selfish baby

Ephesians 5:25–28 KJV

Eph. 5:25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it;

Eph. 5:26 That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word,

Eph. 5:27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

Eph. 5:28 So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself.

XI. Ephesians 5:25–28

- A. In a Jewish home on Shabbat, the husbands speak Proverbs 31, beginning in verse 10, over their wives
- B. The water of these verses washes their wives

Proverbs 31:10–20 KJV

Prov. 31:10 ¶ Who can find a virtuous woman? for her price *is* far above rubies.

Prov. 31:11 The heart of her husband doth safely trust in her, so that he shall have no need of spoil.

Prov. 31:12 She will do him good and not evil all the days of her life.

Prov. 31:13 She seeketh wool, and flax, and worketh willingly with her hands.

Prov. 31:14 She is like the merchants' ships; she bringeth her food from afar.

Prov. 31:15 She riseth also while it is yet night, and giveth meat to her household, and a portion to her maidens.

Prov. 31:16 She considereth a field, and buyeth it: with the fruit of her hands she planteth a vineyard.

Prov. 31:17 She girdeth her loins with strength, and strengtheneth her arms.

Prov. 31:18 She perceiveth that her merchandise *is* good: her candle goeth not out by night.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Prov. 31:19 She layeth her hands to the spindle, and her hands hold the distaff.

Prov. 31:20 She stretcheth out her hand to the poor; yea, she reacheth forth her hands to the needy.

- C. She may get teary from the words and from the little ones around her joining in
 - D. When a husband does this for his wife every week, it's easy for her to submit to him
 - E. Our Jewish Bridegroom, Jesus, washes us with the water of His Word
 - 1. We are separated from the world and any other lovers
 - 2. He's a jealous God and He wants first place
- XII. Ephesians 6:18** Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints;
- A. The saints need to be watched over and it must be done in the spirit
 - B. Phil Halverson was a good example of one who did this
 - 1. When her children were very small, Shelli and her family moved to California
 - 2. All four of the family members were in the same moving truck cab
 - a. There were also full boxes in the cab
 - b. Kylie was filling the cab with paper chains as well
 - 3. For the whole three-day trip, there had been almost no crying, whining, or arguing
 - 4. When they arrived at their destination, Shelli called her mother from the grocery and noticed the time: 11:42 a.m.
 - 5. A few days later, the family decided to go to a church service
 - a. Shelli's husband had heard that Phil Halverson would ministering in there
 - b. The church was an hour and a half away
 - c. It took effort, but the family went to the service
 - 6. They went to lunch with Brother Phil and the pastor after the service
 - 7. Br. Phil asked Shelli what the family had been doing lately
 - a. Shelli told him about taking three days to move out to California
 - b. She told him that she had been with her family in a U-Haul truck
 - 8. Br. Phil laughed and slapped his leg
 - a. He said, "Three days?"
 - b. When Shelli affirmed his question, Br. Phil said that he had been hovering in prayer over a truck for three days
 - c. He asked Shelli at what time the family had arrived
 - d. When she told him 11:42 A.M., he said that it was at that time that the Holy Ghost had told him that he was finished with his assignment
 - 9. Miss Shelli knew this was the source of the "heaven in the home" in their truck

- XIII.** Adventures in God are waiting for us, and we've barely scratched the surface
- A. At the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ, there will be a Body of Christ which will work hand-in-glove with the Holy Spirit of love
 - B. He will show visions as we watch over the saints in the Spirit
 - C. John G. Lake gave another example of this watching over the saints
 - 1. Br. Lake was praying with other saints
 - 2. He saw light coming out of each believer and coming toward him
 - 3. The light gathered and escorted him from his location to an insane asylum
 - 4. He saw a woman in chains and brought her deliverance by praying over her in the name of Jesus
 - 5. He then traveled back to the prayer meeting
 - D. There are two kinds of vessels
 - 1. There are vessels of gold, sanctified for the Master's use
 - 2. There are common vessels made of earth and clay
 - E. This applies to those who are already born again and filled with the Holy Spirit
 - F. The washing of the water of the Word purifies us for more of God and His purpose
 - G. This is what Phil Halverson did
 - H. This is what the prophets of the Old Testament did
 - I. This is what we're doing now
 - J. We are a glorious Church without spot or wrinkle
 - K. We're doing great exploits for the Almighty God!

SESSION 14 ENDS HERE

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

EPHESIANS

SESSION 15

Walking Out New Testament Realities: Part 5

SESSION 15 STARTS HERE

I. A look at the word “love”

- A. In the Book of Ephesians, the first location of the word “love” is in Ephesians 1:4

Ephesians 1:4–5 KJV

Eph. 1:4 According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:

Eph. 1:5 Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will,

Ephesians 1:4–5 ESV

⁴ even as he chose us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and blameless before **him. In love ⁵ he predestined** us for adoption to himself as sons through Jesus Christ, according to the purpose of his will,

- B. In the original Greek, the end of the sentence isn’t marked by punctuation
1. The King James and others include “in love” as part of the wording of verse 4
 2. The English Standard Version and others start a new sentence with “in love”
 - a. Starting the next thought with “in love” shows us that His love is what causes us to be predestined to be His children
 - b. He’s a heavenly Father who chose a family

Ephesians 1:15 KJV Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints

II. **Ephesians 1:15**—The words “faith” and “love” are used in proximity here

Ephesians 2:4 KJV But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us

Ephesians 3:17 KJV That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love

Mark 4:13–17 KJV

Mark 4:13 And he said unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how then will ye know all parables?

Mark 4:14 The sower soweth the word.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Mark 4:15 And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown; but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.

Mark 4:16 And these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground; who, when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness;

Mark 4:17 And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth for the word's sake, immediately they are offended.

III. Ephesians 3:17 and Mark 4:13–17

- A. Because we're being taught the Word from the Book of Ephesians, Satan will try to steal the Word from our heart, as Mark 4:17 states
- B. Those with "no root" endure only for a time
- C. The attacks come for the Word's sake, so we don't take them personally
- D. If we get offended, we have a root problem
 1. When operating in offense, the seed of God's Word won't do what it needs to do
 2. The seed gets choked out
- E. In the natural, the root is the hidden part of the vegetation
- F. Spiritually, the love of God is shed abroad in our heart—the hidden part
- G. It says in Ephesians 3:17 *That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love ...*
 1. Being rooted and grounded in His love is how we can have good strong roots
 2. When we have good, strong roots, we produce what was intended

Ephesians 3:19 KJV And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.

IV. Ephesians 3:19 KJV *And to know the love of Christ ...*

- A. This is not "to know" on a surface level, but through experience
- B. This is having victories that result from walking in love

Ephesians 4:1–2 KJV

Eph. 4:1 ¶ I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called,

Eph. 4:2 ¶ With all lowliness and meekness, with longsuffering, forbearing one another in love;

V. Ephesians 4:1–2—The way we "walk out" being seated in heavenly places is "in love"

Ephesians 4:15–16 KJV

Eph. 4:15 But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, *even* Christ:

Eph. 4:16 From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edifying of itself in love.

VI. Ephesians 4:15–16—Love is directly connected to the edifying of the Body of Christ

Ephesians 5:1–2 KJV

Eph. 5:1 ¶ Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children;

Eph. 5:2 And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweetsmelling savour.

Ephesians 6:23 KJV Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

VII. Ephesians 6:23 *Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith, from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.*

- A. “Love with faith” is coming from God the Father
- B. Smith Wigglesworth was a great man of God who now resides in heaven
 - 1. He participated in many miracles, including raising the dead
 - 2. His wife had died, and he pressed into God to counter the feeling of being alone
 - 3. He discovered a “place in God” in which the Father rocks His child
- C. Miss Shelli expressed the desire to yield to that side of God
- D. David, Miss Shelli’s husband, shared a story about experiencing this kind of close fellowship with his own son
 - 1. David’s son Jeremy really enjoyed cuddling
 - 2. He would come to his daddy (David) and tell him, “I’m cold,” even on a 90-degree day in Alabama (that meant he wanted to cuddle and take a nap)
 - 3. David would gladly hold him
- E. With childlike faith, we can receive faith and love from our Heavenly Father
 - 1. He can hold us, love us, rock us, and speak shalom over us
 - 2. He sings songs of deliverance over us (Psalm 32:7)

VIII. When we know the Father loves us, it’s easy for the root of love to grow and not get offended. This point can be illustrated through a story by Max Lucado.

- A. There was a toymaker in a village full of Weebles-style wooden people
- B. This was a lovely, happy little village where people went around putting stickers on one another
 - 1. No one was prompted to apply the stickers—they just did it
 - 2. Many of the toy people had star stickers on them
 - a. A toy could receive a star because they were talented
 - b. A toy could receive a star because they were pretty
 - c. A toy could receive a star just because they had a lot of stars
 - 3. Many other toy people had gray dot stickers on them
 - a. A toy could receive a gray dot because they were not talented
 - b. A toy could receive a gray dot because they were ugly

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- c. A toy could receive a gray dot just because they had so many gray dots
- 4. Still others had a mixture of stars and dots
- C. One little toy was discouraged because he was full of gray dots
 - 1. One day he got encouraged by a bright, shining toy with no stars and no dots—no stickers at all
 - 2. When he asked the shining, no-sticker toy why she was that way, she said, “Because I spend time with the Toymaker.”
 - 3. She invited him to go with her to the Toymaker (the Father God)
 - 4. The Toymaker expressed His joy to the little toy. “I’m so glad you have finally come to spend time with Me!”
 - a. He picked up the little toy and some stickers fell off
 - b. He said that if the little toy would spend more time with Him, all the dots would go away
- D. The sign of a mature Christian is that they don’t care if someone puts a star or a dot on them
 - 1. A mature Christian is dead to praise
 - 2. A mature Christian is dead to criticism
 - 3. A mature Christian is therefore not offended
 - 4. This is growing up spiritually
 - 5. This person has spent time with the Father and therefore God’s opinion is what counts

Growing Up, Spiritually

(using the book by Kenneth E. Hagin, *Growing Up, Spiritually*⁶⁰)

Chapter 6: WALKING IN LOVE

“... the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost ...”

Romans 5:5

- IX.** To walk with God, in His realm and in fellowship with Him, we must walk in love
 - A. When we were born again, God became our Father
 - B. He is a love God
 - 1. I am a love child of a love God
 - 2. I am born of God, and God is love, so I am born of love
 - C. The nature of God is in me, and the nature of God is love
 - D. We can’t deny that this love is in us when the Word says it’s shed abroad in our heart

⁶⁰ Kenneth E. Hagin, *Growing Up, Spiritually* (Tulsa, OK: Rhema Bible Church, 1976)

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- E. The way people will know that we're Christians is if we have love for one another (John 13:35)
 - 1. This kind of love is unselfish
 - 2. It loves even when we don't deserve it
- X.** Divine Love and Natural Love Compared
 - A. God's love is divine love—there is no other love like it in the world
 - B. Natural human love is selfish
 - 1. Some say a mother's love is like the love of God
 - 2. It is, however, usually natural human love
 - C. One woman asked Br. Hagin to pray for her children
 - 1. She said she had raised them all in church
 - 2. The only child who attended church at that time was her daughter
 - 3. She said no one in the church loved their children more than she did
 - 4. Br. Hagin felt that there had to be a reason the other children weren't in church
 - a. He had observed the daughter, who played the church piano
 - b. He told the mother that she had smothered her daughter with her "love"
 - c. He told her that she had also tried to run the lives of her sons, who had run away
 - D. Br. Hagin asserted that this was selfish, human, natural love
- XI.** Miss Shelli introduced her son-in-law, Jimmy Gatewood, who was present
 - A. She thanked him for walking in love toward his mother-in-law
 - B. He said he couldn't have asked for a better mother-in-law
- XII.** Divine Love and Natural Love Compared (continued) ...
 - A. Mothers-in-law most often have trouble with daughters-in-law
 - B. The love of God is in our hearts, but may be hidden like the talent that was wrapped in a napkin (Luke 19:20)
 - C. The love of God is in our hearts
 - 1. We may not use it, but if we let it dominate us, it would make a difference in our lives
 - 2. It would cure the ills in our homes
 - D. God's kind of love has never been to a divorce court
 - 1. Christians have been to divorce court
 - 2. They weren't letting the love of God dominate them
 - E. Natural human love can turn to hatred when it doesn't get its way
 - F. We can be made perfect, or mature, in love
 - G. The God-kind of love isn't interested in what it can get, but what it can give
 - H. At the second church that Br. Hagin pastored, he rented a room from a couple in the church
 - 1. The man believed he should assert his opinion at church

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

2. Other members of the church felt the same way
 3. The workings of the church were wrecked by all their opinions
 4. In his first prophetic utterance, Br. Hagin told the congregation that the doors of the church would close if they didn't repent
 - a. If they did close, the Lord said the church would remain closed two years
 - b. They would then get a second chance
 - c. If they didn't make it work at that time, even the church building would be moved off the church lot
 5. The people got angry at Br. Hagin and reported him to the denomination
 6. Br. Hagin left the pastorate of that church after six months
 7. At the end of that year, the doors of the church closed
 8. They stayed closed and padlocked for two years
 9. The church was then reopened
 - a. God gave the pastor a limited amount of time
 - b. The people didn't walk in the light, and it closed again
 - c. As of the time of the writing of this book, there was only an empty lot where the church had stood
 10. There were enough people in the area to support a church through the years
 - a. They were unable to have a church, however, because they couldn't get along with each other
 - b. They never matured beyond the babyhood stage of Christianity
 - I. As children of God, we have God's nature in us
 1. God's nature is love
 2. If the flesh and mind dominate us, the love nature is held prisoner
 - J. Let's release the love of God that's within us
- XIII.** An Exposé on Love
- A. The characteristics of the God-kind of love are given in 1 Corinthians 13

1 Corinthians 13:4–8 AMPC

1 Cor. 13:4 Love endures long *and* is patient and kind; love never is envious *nor* boils over with jealousy, is not boastful *or* vainglorious, does not display itself haughtily.

1 Cor. 13:5 It is not conceited (arrogant and inflated with pride); it is not rude (unmannerly) *and* does not act unbecomingly. Love (God's love in us) does not insist on its own rights *or* its own way, *for* it is not self-seeking; it is not touchy *or* fretful *or* resentful; it takes no account of the evil done to it [it pays no attention to a suffered wrong].

1 Cor. 13:6 It does not rejoice at injustice and unrighteousness, but rejoices when right and truth prevail.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

1 Cor. 13:7 Love bears up under anything *and* everything that comes, is ever ready to believe the best of every person, its hopes are fadeless under all circumstances, and it endures everything [without weakening].

1 Cor. 13:8 Love never fails [never fades out or becomes obsolete or comes to an end]. As for prophecy (the gift of interpreting the divine will and purpose), it will be fulfilled *and* pass away; as for tongues, they will be destroyed *and* cease; as for knowledge, it will pass away [it will lose its value and be superseded by truth].

B. 1 Corinthians 13:4–8

1. *Love endures long and is patient and kind ...*
 - a. Many endure long, but they're not patient and kind while they do it
 - b. Miss Shelli had an example of this phenomenon
 - i. After church, Miss Shelli's dad (Kent Brim) would go to his car, hungry and ready to leave
 - ii. Sister Billye would be inside the church talking to people
 - iii. He would send in the four Brim kids, one at a time, to get their mother to leave
 - iv. When she came to the car, Kent Brim pointed out that he had been very patient
 - v. Sister Billye responded that love is not only patient, but kind
 - c. Many suffer long (as it is worded in the King James Version) because they have to
 - d. That's human love
2. *... love never is envious nor boils over with jealousy ... it's natural human love that gets jealous*
3. *... love never is envious nor boils over with jealousy, is not boastful or vainglorious, does not display itself haughtily.*
⁵It is not conceited (arrogant and inflated with pride); it is not rude (unmannerly) and does not act unbecomingly. Love (God's love in us) does not insist on its own rights or its own way, for it is not self-seeking
 ...
 Insisting on your own rights can cause someone else to get hurt
4. *... it is not touchy or fretful or resentful; it takes no account of the evil done to it [it pays no attention to a suffered wrong].*
 - a. This is the love thermometer or gauge
 - b. Taking account of the evil done to you is not walking in love
 - c. Someone who walks in love, staying full of the Spirit, doesn't take account of evil done to them
 - d. Things have happened to me (Br. Hagin) over the years
 - i. Some people said I shouldn't put up with it
 - ii. I just kept my mouth shut and stayed happy
 - iii. With this policy, you'll come out on top in the long run
 - e. Some have said that facing accusation with silence is a sign of weakness

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- i. It's actually a strength
 - ii. Love never fails
 - f. Many have failed and even died because they lived in the natural to such a degree
 - i. They couldn't take advantage of the rights of the child of God
 - ii. Their bad attitude continued until it affected their bodies
- 5. *[Love] takes no account of the evil done to it ...*
 - a. This must be the God-kind of love
 - i. We were enemies of God
 - ii. He didn't take into account the evil we did to Him
 - b. He sent Jesus to redeem us
 - c. He loved us while we were yet sinners
- 6. *[Love] pays no attention to a suffered wrong ...*
 - a. There aren't too many people walking in love
 - b. They do all the things that 1 Corinthians says love doesn't do
 - c. John Osteen said he had been one of these
 - d. Many things in the home, church, and nation would be straightened out if people would get God's love in their hearts and then live in it
- 7. *Love does not rejoice at injustice and unrighteousness, but rejoices when right and truth prevail. Love bears up under anything and everything that comes ...*
 - a. God has put up with us, so we can put up with each other
 - b. The love of God in us bears up under everything
- 8. *Love is ever ready to believe the best of every person ...*
 - a. Natural human love is ready to believe the worst of every person
 - b. A good policy is to believe that gossip is false and to believe the best of the other person
 - c. This is what it takes to cooperate with a higher degree of the glory of God
 - d. Children should be brought up in this kind of love atmosphere
 - i. If you see the worst in your children, they'll live up to that
 - ii. If you see the best in your children, it will bring out the best in them
 - e. Miss Shelli experienced this personally with her own children
- 9. *Love's hopes are fadeless under all circumstances. It endures everything without weakening. Love never fails, never fades out or becomes obsolete or comes to an end.*
 - a. If you walk in love, you will never fail
 - b. The gifts of the Spirit exercised outside of love are like a "sounding brass and tinkling cymbal"

EPHESIANS: WALKING OUT NEW TESTAMENT REALITIES—PART 5
THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

- c. It would be good to have the gifts of the Spirit, but let's have love along with them
 - d. The Bible says we can be made perfect in love in this world
10. Miss Shelli pronounced over the class that she believed the best in us and that we will be perfected in love

SESSION 15 ENDS HERE

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

EPHESIANS

CHAPTER 2:19-22

God's Building

SESSION 16 STARTS HERE

When God crowned man in the Garden, He told him to have dominion. Glory and dominion go together. The glorious Church is to be walking in authority.

Ephesians 2:19-22 KJV

Eph. 2:19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the household of God;

Eph. 2:20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner *stone*;

Eph. 2:21 In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord:

Eph. 2:22 In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

Find out what God is doing now and get in on it. This is what God is doing now in this dispensation of grace. He is building a living, walking, talking Temple that will be built for "an habitation of God" through the Holy Spirit.

God will get the job done.

The line will be written as it was for the previous houses of God's Glory.

So Moses finished the work ...
and the Tabernacle was filled with His glory.

Solomon finished the work ...
and the Temple was filled with His glory.

And it will be written:

The Holy Spirit finished the work ...
and the Church was filled with His Glory.

The Building Program

1 Corinthians 3:9-17 KJV

1 Cor. 3:9 For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, **ye are God's building.**

1 Cor. 3:10 According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

1 Cor. 3:11 For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

1 Cor. 3:12 Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble;

1 Cor. 3:13 Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is.

"it shall be revealed by fire"

I believe that fire is the glory of God.

1 Cor. 3:14 If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, **he shall receive a reward.**

1 Cor. 3:15 If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.

1 Cor. 3:16 Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

1 Cor. 3:17 If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are.

There is a building program going on, and somehow, the rewards for the deeds done in the body are attached to this building program.

Revelation 22:12 KJV And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.

Here's what I believe is going to happen:

The Rapture of the Church (when Jesus catches us away).

The Bema Judgment (the Judgment Seat of Christ).

The Presentation.

The Marriage Supper of the Lamb.

2 Corinthians 5:10 KJV For **we must all appear** before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

We have an appointment for which we MUST all appear. It is not the Great White Throne Judgment.

Our appointment is at the *Bema* (Greek) Judgment Seat of the Lord. This is not a judgment for sin. Jesus has already been judged for our sin and has paid the penalty.

You will be glad you are there. It is the place of reward. You will be rewarded for eternity for what you do in your body.

You don't get saved this way. You are saved by grace through faith. But you are rewarded for the good works done in your body.

Wood. Hay. Stubble. They must go.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Make it your business to build—NEVER TEAR DOWN—the Temple of God. Every person you deal with is a “living stone.” Don’t have anything to do with damaging one of God’s living stones.

There will come a real day when they call my name at the Judgment Seat of Christ.

One day, during the time that I worked for Kenneth E. Hagin, he was leaving my office. As he walked out with his hand on the doorknob, he turned and looked back at me and said, “I live every moment of my life conscious of that moment when I will stand before Jesus Christ and answer to Him for this ministry.”

Then I went to South Bend, Indiana, and edited a few books for Lester Sumrall. I was shocked one day when Lester started to leave my office, and with his hand on the doorknob, he turned to me, and with the same look in his eyes, he said, “I live every moment of my life conscious of that moment when I will stand before the Lord Jesus Christ and answer for every dime that came through this ministry.”

(Some of the following notes are taken from the transcript of my teaching on “The Glorious Church” at a Kenneth Copeland meeting in Detroit, probably around 1984. I didn’t want to change it by bringing it up to date. This is what I said that day.)

My husband is here this afternoon.

I taught a series on women in ministry in Victory Bible School. He wasn’t there in those classes. But people would call him and say, “We’re glad that you let Billye go preach.”

And he’d always say this. “I don’t want to stand before Jesus Christ, when Billye had a call on her life to preach . . . I don’t want to have to stand there and tell Him, ‘I wouldn’t let her go.’”

(Applause.)

1 Corinthians 6:19-20 KJV

1 Cor. 6:19 What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?

1 Cor. 6:20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore **glorify God in your body**, and in your spirit, which are God’s.

The oldest manuscripts end with “glorify God in your body.”

1 Corinthians 6:20 ASV for ye were bought with a price: glorify God therefore in your body.

The rewards come for what you did in your body.

You are God’s inheritance. You are to bring God glory in your body.

Your job and mine.

Glorify God in our body.

Bring God Glory in our body.

SESSION 16 CONTINUES IN LESSON 9

EPHESIANS

CHAPTER 3:1-11

The Purpose of the Ages

SESSION 16 CONTINUES HERE

Ephesians 3:1-4 KJV

Eph. 3:1 ¶ For this cause I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles,

Eph. 3:2 If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God which is given me to you-ward:

Eph. 3:3 How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery; (as I wrote afore in few words,

Eph. 3:4 Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ)

In Galatians, we see how this revelation came to Paul.

Galatians 1:11-12, 17-2:2 KJV

Gal. 1:11 ¶ For I would have you know, brothers, that the gospel that was preached by me is not man's gospel.

Gal. 1:12 For I did not receive it from any man, nor was I taught it, but I received it through a revelation of Jesus Christ....

Gal. 1:17 nor did I go up to Jerusalem to those who were apostles before me, but I went away into Arabia [unknown period of time], and returned again to Damascus.

Gal. 1:18 ¶ Then after three years I went up to Jerusalem to visit Cephas [Peter] and remained with him fifteen days.

Gal. 1:19 But I saw none of the other apostles except James the Lord's brother.

Gal. 1:20 (In what I am writing to you, before God, I do not lie!)

Gal. 1:21 Then I went into the regions of Syria and Cilicia.

Gal. 1:22 And I was still unknown in person to the churches of Judea that are in Christ.

Gal. 1:23 They only were hearing it said, "He who used to persecute us is now preaching the faith he once tried to destroy."

Gal. 1:24 And they glorified God because of me.

Gal. 2:1 ¶ Then after fourteen years I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, taking Titus along with me.

| 14 years + 3 years = 17 years

Gal. 2:2 I went up because of a revelation and set before them (though privately before those who seemed influential) the gospel that I proclaim among the Gentiles, in order to make sure I was not running or had not run in vain.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Ephesians 3:4-8 KJV

Eph. 3:4 Whereby, when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ)

Eph. 3:5 Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit;

Eph. 3:6 That the Gentiles should be fellowheirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the gospel:

Eph. 3:7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me by the effectual working of his power.

Eph. 3:8 Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ;

| Paul never saw Jesus in the flesh. God revealed this to Paul.

The Divine Purpose of the Ages

Ephesians 3:9-11 KJV

Eph. 3:9 And to make all *men* see what *is* the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ:

Eph. 3:10 To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly *places* might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God,

Eph. 3:11 According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord:

John MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*

The seats of authority of these rebellious spiritual rulers are also in the heavenlies. From there they have dominated the human race since its fall. There they will remain until the divine “purpose of the ages” is complete.

...

This purpose, present and future, is very definitely stated in Ephesians 3:9-11. Here it is revealed as the divine will that “now (*nun*, the present time) unto the principalities and powers in the heavenly places might be made known *through the church* the manifold wisdom of God” (3:10). The Church is to be God’s instrument in declaring to these rebellious and now usurping powers the divine purpose, and in administering their principalities after they have been unseated and cast down

This if further declared to be “according to the eternal purpose of the ages which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord” (3”11). That is to say, God, through all the past ages, has had in view this wonderful plan of preparing in Christ Jesus a people, chosen and called and faithful, whom He might place in these heavenly seats to rule through the ages yet to come.

...

Israel will administer the earthly kingdom and will be head of the nations, but overall will rule the exalted Church as the executive of God.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

... may “the eyes of [our] understanding be enlightened” (Ephesians 1:18) by the Holy Spirit so that we may believe, without any doubt or shrinking, that the wisdom and will of the Father have made us sharers of this same authority, and that He verily intends that we should exercise it day by day in growing comprehension and apprehension.⁶¹

It has been God’s will, since before the first age ever, that there would come a group, chosen in God, who would stand before Him and would be seated in Christ at God’s right hand to manifest God to those principalities and powers. It is God’s purpose of the ages that we sit in our seats of authority every morning and rule and reign. It is God’s purpose of the ages that the devil doesn’t have high carnival in our homes. It’s not something to just think about or read about. It is something to DO!

Ephesians 3:9–11 ESV

Eph. 3:9 and to bring to light for everyone what is the plan of the mystery hidden for ages in God, who created all things,

Eph. 3:10 so that through the church the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known to the rulers and authorities in the heavenly places.

Eph. 3:11 This was according to the eternal purpose that he has realized in Christ Jesus our Lord,

Ephesians 3:10–11 AMPC

Eph. 3:10 [The purpose is] that through the church the complicated, many-sided wisdom of God in all its infinite variety *and* innumerable aspects might now be made known to the angelic rulers and authorities (principalities and powers) in the heavenly sphere.

Eph. 3:11 This is in accordance with the terms of the eternal *and* timeless purpose which He has realized *and* carried into effect in [the person of] Christ Jesus our Lord,

Ephesians 3:9–11 YLT

Eph. 3:9 and to cause all to see what [is] the fellowship of the secret that hath been hid from the ages in God, who the all things did create by Jesus Christ,

Eph. 3:10 that there might be made known now to the principalities and the authorities in the heavenly [places], through the assembly, the manifold wisdom of God,

Eph. 3:11 according to a purpose of the ages, which He made in Christ Jesus our Lord,

We are the purpose of God from the first age. We are chosen to reveal God to the world **right now**. He wants us to reveal Him in His blessings, in our authority. He wants us to reveal Him in our handling of the devil. He never told us to pray about the devil; we are to take our authority over the devil.

⁶¹ John A. MacMillan, *The Authority of the Believer*. (originally published as a series of articles, 1932; repr., Branson, MO: A Glorious Church Fellowship, 2015), 13.

Smith Wigglesworth, *Power to Serve* (retitled as *Only Believe*)

The God of power, majesty, and glory can bring you to a place of dethroning everything else! ... God our Father is so intensely desirous to have all the fullness of the manifestation of His power, that we do not have to have one thing that His Son did not come to bring ... He is with us in all power, dethroning the power of the enemy.⁶²

Ruling and Reigning

Romans 5:17 KJV For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.)

Ephesians 1:17–2:1 KJV

Eph. 1:17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him:

Eph. 1:18 The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints,

Eph. 1:19 And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power,

Eph. 1:20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places,

Eph. 1:21 Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come:

Eph. 1:22 And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church,

Eph. 1:23 Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.

Eph. 2:1 And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins;

Ephesians 2:4–6 KJV

Eph. 2:4 But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us,

Eph. 2:5 Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)

Eph. 2:6 And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:

SESSION 16 ENDS AFTER A TIME OF PRAYER

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

⁶² Smith Wigglesworth, *Only Believe—Experience God's Miracles Every Day*, previously published as *Smith Wigglesworth on Power to Serve* (New Kensington, PA: Whitaker House, 1998), 41–42.

EPHESIANS

CHAPTER 3:14–21

Filled with God

SESSION 17 STARTS HERE

This, the second prayer in Ephesians, has to do with the Glory. It is a prayer that we will be filled with God.

Ephesians 3:14–21 KJV

Eph. 3:14 ¶ For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,

Eph. 3:15 Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named,

Eph. 3:16 That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might [*dunamis*] by his Spirit in the inner man;

“according to the riches of his glory”

The only limit on what Paul is praying for on behalf of the Ephesians is “the riches of his [God’s] glory. In other words, in God’s economy, there are no limits. The only things that could possibly limit God’s supply in our lives is fleshly doubt and religious thinking.

Paul has already prayed that the Ephesians would walk in the authority (*exousia*) that God has granted them. Now he prays that God would strengthen them with power (*dunamis*).

Eph. 3:17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love,

Even after you are born again, your faith needs to grow.

God wants us to walk in love. If we step out of our love walk, we can’t be effective in our authority.

Eph. 3:18 May be able to comprehend with all saints what *is* the breadth, and length, and depth, and height;

Eph. 3:19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, **that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.**

Eph. 3:20 Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us,

Eph. 3:21 Unto him *be* glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

Age after age, there will be an entity know as the Church, the Body of Christ, whose job it is to give God glory. And that’s our job now.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Smith Wigglesworth often sang and led others to sing before he preached. One song he often sang was:

Filled with God

Yes, filled with God

Pardoned and cleansed and filled with God.

Filled with God

Yes, filled with God

*Emptied of self and filled with God.*⁶³

He died for us that He might cleanse us.

He cleansed us so that we might become filled with the glory of God.

This Second Holy Spirit Anointed Prayer in Ephesians Is to That End

Ephesians 3:14–21 KJV

Eph. 3:14 ¶ For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,

Eph. 3:15 Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named,

Eph. 3:16 That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man;

Eph. 3:17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith; that ye, being rooted and grounded in love,

Eph. 3:18 May be able to comprehend with all saints what *is* the breadth, and length, and depth, and height;

Eph. 3:19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, **that ye might be filled with all the fulness of God.**

Eph. 3:20 Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us,

Eph. 3:21 Unto him *be* glory in the church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

Prophecies

Excerpted from Lesson Appendix 3 “Tongues and Interpretation by Kenneth Hagin”

For thus saith the Lord:

Follow my Spirit and let your words be seasoned with wisdom. And so thou shalt walk in a new dimension of prayer. Yea, I'll take thee deeper than you've ever gone before. Even in the realm of the prayer.

⁶³Charles Price Jones, *Built On the Rock* (1899)

https://hymnary.org/text/built_on_the_rock_not_on_the_sand

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

...

Yea, saith the Lord of Hosts:

Let not man ruin the move of God by his wrong thinking, selfish feelings, and childlike maneuvers. But rather let him assert himself, and submit himself to walk in the light of the Word.

And always remember: submit unto authority. And My authority is the greatest authority of all. And My authority shall be delegated unto you. And you shall exert authority upon the earth. And great shall be the rejoicing thereof.

Yea, saith the Lord of hosts:

A knowledge that has not been known before. A realm that has not been attained unto before. A dimension that has not been entered into before. (Oh, occasionally just in the edge of it.) Shall be entered into by those who desire to enter into the prayer fight.

They will not endeavor to attract attention unto themselves. Anytime you attract attention unto yourself, you attract attention away from Me, saith the Lord.

And so humble yourself and call upon Me and say, "Oh Lord, may no one

see me, but may they see You. But make me an instrument in Your hand that You can use.

And so, it will be good with thee. And so, it will be well with thee. And so, the work of God shall be consummated and the will of God accomplished upon the earth.

Excerpted from Lesson Appendix 4

“Word of Wisdom: Word of Knowledge of What the Holy Ghost Is Saying”

Kenneth Hagin Prayer Seminar, April 28, 1983

In this move of God that is just about to spring upon you, there will be a manifestation of casting out demons that you haven't seen yet. Now some have drawn back from casting out demons.

...

And a revival of the supernatural—not only the supernatural in casting out devils, not only the supernatural in healing the sick, not only the supernatural in speaking with other tongues—but the supernatural in the realm of the seen realm.

Men will see the glory of God. A cloud will hang over certain congregations, even the church building for days at the time. And everybody that passes by, sinner and saint alike, will say, "Well, what in the world is that? I've never seen anything like that."

And there will be in other places, there will be in other places fire of the Spirit that will actually become literal.

...

And signs, signs! What kinds of signs? Miraculous things in the realm of the Spirit! And then they'll be manifested in the realm of the physical. And the glory of God will fall. And the power of God will be in manifestation. And men will—and women too—

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

will even be transported like Philip was and found in another place. And great! GREAT! GREAT! Shall be the reward thereof.

For the Lord God is the same God today as He was yesterday. His power has not diminished, and His Name is still the same. Today He can make the iron axe-head to float. Today He can divide the river just for two men to cross over on the other side. Today He can feed five thousand with a little boy's lunch.

He is the miracle working God. Brag on Him! Lift Him up! Draw attention unto Him! Tell about how great He is.

Get up in faith and tell what great things He's going to do. And He'll move and keep His Word with you! And many shall be astonished.

But the greatest miracle of all is that there'll be so many fish caught in the net that the nets can't hold them. There won't be church houses enough to hold the people. Amen, Amen. For the purpose of it all is that you may be fishers of men. Hallelujah!

Quit fishing—hallelujah!—quit fishing in your own bathtub. There's not any fish in your own bathtub. Go out where the fishes are and throw out the net. Not the hook—the NET! And pull it in. Hallelujah! And bring them in.

And the glory of the Lord shall shine. And the end time shall come. And you'll stand in the place, yes, many of you that stand here, including myself, will stand in the place of ministry that you've not stood in before. And will stand in the place that's been ordained for you from the foundation of the earth! Hallelujah. Hallelujah.

...

The power of God in manifestation shall be the gifts of the Spirit, the manifestation of His Spirit. Into full potential shall come the ministry gifts, the apostle and prophet, the evangelist, and pastor and teacher too.

Ephesians 4:8-13 KJV

Eph. 4:8 Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

Eph. 4:9 (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

Eph. 4:10 He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.)

Eph. 4:11 And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers;

These are Christ's gifts to the Church. He gave apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors, and teachers. These are the five-fold ministry gifts. We must only stand in what we are called to. I recommend the book *He Gave Gifts unto Men*, by Kenneth E. Hagin.

We don't have a right to judge people, but we do have a right—a responsibility to judge prophecies.

Eph. 4:12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Eph. 4:13 Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ:

Excerpted from Lesson Appendix 5

**Tommy Hicks, “Vision of the Body of Christ and the End-Time Ministries”
July 25, 1961**

The following is a stunning vision given to American preacher Tommy Hicks (who was a major figure in the powerful 1954 Argentina Revival).

My message begins July 25, about 2:30 in the morning at Winnipeg, Canada. I had hardly fallen asleep when the vision and the revelation that God gave me came before me. The vision came three times, exactly in detail, the morning of July 25, 1961. I was so stirred and so moved by the revelation that this has changed my complete outlook upon the body of Christ, and upon the end-time ministries.

...

As the vision appeared to me after I was asleep, I suddenly found myself in a great high distance. Where I was, I do not know. But I was looking down upon the Earth. Suddenly the whole Earth came into my view. Every nation, every kindred, every tongue came before my sight from the east and the west, the north and the south. I recognized every country and many cities that I had been in, and I was almost in fear and trembling as I beheld the great sight before me: and at that moment when the world came into view, it began to lightning and thunder.

As the lightning flashed over the face of the Earth, my eyes went downward, and I was facing the north. Suddenly I beheld what looked like a great giant, and as I stared and looked at it, I was almost bewildered by the sight. It was so gigantic and so great. His feet seemed to reach to the North Pole and his head to the South. Its arms were stretched from sea to sea. I could not even begin to understand whether this be a mountain or this be a giant, but as I watched, I suddenly beheld a great giant. I could see his head was struggling for life. He wanted to live, but his body was covered with debris from head to foot, and at times this great giant would move his body and act as though it would even raise up at times. And when it did, thousands of little creatures seemed to run away. Hideous creatures would run away from this giant, and when he would become calm, they would come back.

All of a sudden, this great giant lifted his hand towards Heaven, and then it lifted its other hand, and when it did these creatures by the thousands seemed to flee away from this giant and go into the darkness of the night.

Slowly this great giant began to rise and as he did, his head and hands went into the clouds. As he rose to his feet, he seemed to have cleansed himself from the debris and filth that was upon him, and he began to raise his hands into the heavens as though praising the Lord, and as he raised his hands, they went even unto the clouds.

Suddenly, every cloud became silver, the most beautiful silver I have ever known. As I watched this phenomenon, it was so great I could not even begin to understand what it all meant. I was so stirred as I watched it, and I cried unto the Lord and I said, “Oh Lord, what is the meaning of this.” and I felt as if I was actually in the Spirit, and I could feel the presence of the Lord even as I was asleep.

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

And from those clouds suddenly there came great drops of liquid light raining down upon this mighty giant, and slowly, slowly, this giant began to melt, began to sink itself in the very earth itself, and as he melted, his whole form seemed to have melted upon the face of the Earth, and this great rain began to come down. Liquid drops of light began to flood the very Earth itself and as I watched this giant that seemed to melt, suddenly it became millions of people over the face of the Earth. As I beheld the sight before me, people stood up all over the world! They were lifting their hands and they were praising the Lord.

At that very moment there came a great thunder that seemed to roar from the heavens. I turned my eyes toward the heavens and suddenly I saw a figure in white, in glistening white—the most glorious thing that I have ever seen in my entire life. I did not see the face, but somehow, I knew it was the Lord Jesus Christ, and He stretched forth his hand, and as He did, He would stretch it forth to one, and to another, and to another. And as He stretched forth his hand upon the nations and the people of the world—men and women—as He pointed toward them, this liquid light seemed to flow from His hands into them, and a mighty anointing of God came upon them, and those people began to go forth in the name of the Lord.

I do not know how long I watched it. It seemed it went into days and weeks and months. And I beheld this Christ as He continued to stretch forth His hand; but there was a tragedy. There were many people as He stretched forth His hand that refused the anointing of God and the call of God. I saw men and women that I knew. People that I felt would certainly receive the call of God. But as He stretched forth His hand toward this one and toward that one, they simply bowed their head and began to back away. And each of those that seemed to bow down and back away, seemed to go into darkness. Blackness seemed to swallow them everywhere.

I was bewildered as I watched it, but these people that He had anointed, hundreds of thousands of people all over the world, in Africa, England, Russia, China, America, all over the world, the anointing of God was upon these people as they went forward in the name of the Lord. I saw these men and women as they went forth. They were ditch diggers, they were washerwomen, they were rich men, they were poor men. I saw people who were bound with paralysis and sickness and blindness and deafness. As the Lord stretched forth to give them this anointing, they became well, they became healed, and they went forth!

And this is the miracle of it—this is the glorious miracle of it—those people would stretch forth their hands exactly as the Lord did, and it seemed as if there was this same liquid fire in their hands. As they stretched forth their hands they said, “According to my word, be thou made whole.”

As these people continued in this mighty end-time ministry, I did not fully realize what it was, and I looked to the Lord and said, “What is the meaning of this?” And He said, “This is that which I will do in the last days. I will restore all that the cankerworm, the palmerworm, the caterpillar—will restore all that they have destroyed. This, my people, in the end times will go forth. As a mighty army shall they sweep over the face of the Earth.”

As I was at this great height, I could behold the whole world. I watched these people as they were going to and fro over the face of the Earth. Suddenly there was a man in Africa, and in a moment, he was transported by the Spirit of God, and perhaps he was in Russia, or China or America or some other place, and vice versa. All over the

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

world these people went, and they came through fire, and through pestilence, and through famine. Neither fire nor persecution, nothing seemed to stop them.

Angry mobs came to them with swords and with guns. And like Jesus, they passed through the multitudes, and they could not find them, but they went forth in the name of the Lord, and everywhere they stretched forth their hands, the sick were healed, the blind eyes were opened. There was not a long prayer, and after I had reviewed the vision many times in my mind, and I thought about it many times, I realized that I never saw a church, and I never saw or heard a denomination, but these people were going in the name of the Lord of Hosts. Hallelujah!

As they marched forth in everything they did as the ministry of Christ in the end times, these people were ministering to the multitudes over the face of the Earth. Tens of thousands, even millions seemed to come to the Lord Jesus Christ as these people stood forth and gave the message of the kingdom, of the coming kingdom, in this last hour. It was so glorious, but it seems as though there were those that rebelled, and they would become angry, and they tried to attack those workers that were giving the message.

God is going to give the world a demonstration in this last hour as the world has never known. These men and women are of all walks of life, degrees will mean nothing. I saw these workers as they were going over the face of the Earth. When one would stumble and fall, another would come and pick him up. There were no “big I” and “little you,” but every mountain was brought low, and every valley was exalted, and they seemed to have one thing in common—there was a divine love, a divine love that seemed to flow forth from these people as they worked together, and as they lived together. It was the most glorious sight that I have ever known. Jesus Christ was the theme of their life. They continued and it seemed the days went by as I stood and beheld this sight. I could only cry, and sometimes I laughed. It was so wonderful as these people went throughout the face of the whole Earth, bringing forth in this last end time.

As I watched from the very heaven itself, there were times when great deluges of this liquid light seemed to fall upon great congregations, and that congregation would lift up their hands and seemingly praise God for hours and even days as the Spirit of God came upon them. God said, “I will pour my Spirit upon all flesh,” and that is exactly this thing. And to every man and every woman that received this power, and the anointing of God, the miracles of God, there was no ending to it.

...

Suddenly there was another great clap of thunder, that seemed to resound around the world, and I heard again the voice, the voice that seemed to speak, “Now this is my people. This is my beloved bride.” And when the voice spoke, I looked upon the Earth and I could see the lakes and the mountains. The graves were opened and people from all over the world, the saints of all ages, seemed to be rising. And as they rose from the grave, suddenly all these people came from every direction. From the east and the west, from the north and the south, and they seemed to be forming again this gigantic body. As the dead in Christ seemed to be rising first, I could hardly comprehend it. It was so marvelous. It was so far beyond anything I could ever dream or think of.

But as this body suddenly began to form, and take shape again, it took shape again in the form of this mighty giant, but this time it was different. It was arrayed in the

THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

most beautiful, gorgeous white. Its garments were without spot or wrinkle as its body began to form, and the people of all ages seemed to be gathered into this body, and slowly, slowly, as it began to form up into the very heavens, suddenly from the heavens above, the Lord Jesus came, and became the head, and I heard another clap of thunder that said, “This is my beloved bride for whom I have waited. She will come forth even tried by fire. This is she that I have loved from the beginning of time.”

As I watched, my eyes suddenly turned to the far north, and I saw seemingly destruction: men and women in anguish and crying out, and buildings in destruction. Then I heard again, the fourth voice that said, “Now is My wrath being poured out upon the face of the Earth.”

...

Then again, I turned my eyes to this glorious sight, this body arrayed in beautiful white, shining garments. Slowly, slowly, it began to lift from the Earth, and as it did, I awoke. What a sight I had beheld! I had seen the end-time ministries—the last hour.

...

SESSION 17 ENDS HERE

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

EPHESIANS

SESSION 18

Psalms, Hymns, and Spiritual Songs

SESSION 18 STARTS HERE

- I. Review: The Book of Ephesians
 - A. The first three chapters speak of who we are in Christ
 - B. Chapters four through six teach us how to walk out the new redemption realities

Ephesians 5:8–22 KJV

Eph. 5:8 For ye were sometimes darkness, but now *are ye* light in the Lord: walk as children of light:

Eph. 5:9 (For the fruit of the Spirit *is* in all goodness and righteousness and truth;)

Eph. 5:10 Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord.

Eph. 5:11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove *them*.

Eph. 5:12 For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret.

Eph. 5:13 But all things that are reproved are made manifest by the light: for whatsoever doth make manifest is light.

Eph. 5:14 Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.

Eph. 5:15 See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise,

Eph. 5:16 Redeeming the time, because the days are evil.

Eph. 5:17 Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord *is*.

Eph. 5:18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit;

Eph. 5:19 Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord;

Eph. 5:20 Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ;

Eph. 5:21 ¶ Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God.

Eph. 5:22 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord.

- II. **Ephesians 5:8 KJV** For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light
 - A. Now we are light, not just when we get to Heaven
 - B. We are to walk as light now
 - C. We're in the light because we're in the Lord

- III. **Ephesians 5:18 KJV** And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit
- A. Halfway filled is not OK
 - B. “be filled” in the Greek means
 - 1. A continuous filling
 - 2. A bubbling over
 - 3. Continuous action
 - C. We are to be constantly filled with the Spirit
- IV. **Ephesians 5:19 KJV** Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord
- A. One way we stay filled with the Spirit, as it says in verse 18, is to practice verse 19
 - B. We sing and speak in psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs
 - 1. We do this in our heart
 - 2. We do this unto the Lord
- V. **Ephesians 5:20 KJV** Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ
- A. Giving thanks is the sign of someone living a life full of the Spirit
 - B. This leaves no room for murmuring or complaining
 - C. Living in a thankful way gives us an opportunity to
 - 1. Trust the Lord
 - 2. Rule and reign
 - 3. Grow spiritually by being a doer of the Word
 - D. We don’t thank God for bad things that happen, but for the opportunity to walk in victory over them
 - E. Whether we’re thankful is a measure of whether we’re being constantly filled with the Spirit
- VI. **Ephesians 5:22 KJV** Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord.—When both spouses stay filled with the Spirit, it’s easy to submit.

Colossians 3:16–18 KJV

Col. 3:16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

Col. 3:17 And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, *do* all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.

Col. 3:18 ¶ Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.

- VII. **Colossians 3:16 KJV** Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.
- A. We are to teach and admonish one another by three avenues
 - 1. Psalms
 - 2. Hymns
 - 3. Spiritual Songs

- B. We sing with grace in our hearts
 - C. We sing unto the Lord
- VIII. **Colossians 3:17-18 KJV**
- Col. 3:17** And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, *do* all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.
- Col. 3:18** ¶ Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.
- A. In both this letter and Galatians 5, the directive of speaking to yourself in psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs is near the mandate to submit
 - B. Being filled with the Spirit enhances one's ability to walk the love walk
 - C. Walking in love and in the Spirit makes it easy to submit
- IX. **1 Corinthians 14:26** How is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done unto edifying.
- A. This is written to "brethren," so it's a meeting without unbelievers
 - B. Every person is bringing a psalm, a doctrine, a tongue, etc. when they come
 - C. This could be called a believer's meeting
 - 1. Different parts of the Body come together
 - 2. The parts all bring their supply
 - D. Everything in these meetings is to be done to edify those who attend
- X. **Psalms, Hymns, and Spiritual Songs**
- A. The word "psalm" in Hebrew is "mizmor"
 - 1. It is from the same root as the word that means "to prune" or "to cut"
 - 2. A psalm has the effect of pruning or cutting off dead bark to make the tree more productive
 - a. A psalm from the Lord will cut off the dead bark of doubt and unbelief
 - b. It will cut off the dead bark of fatigue
 - c. It will cut off the dead bark of hopelessness
 - 3. If someone is in a trial, they can look to the Greater One inside and receive a psalm
 - a. It might be an old song from the past or a new one
 - b. When we sing it, the pruning of that song keeps that dead bark from attaching to us
 - 4. When we continue to be filled with the Spirit, we can prune away the dead stuff and continue to grow
 - B. **Matthew 26:30** And when they had **sung an hymn**, they went out into the mount of Olives.
 - 1. Jesus and His disciples were Jewish
 - a. This was at the end of their Passover Seder meal
 - b. The Jews sang particular songs at Passover
 - 2. Jesus and His disciples would have sung Psalm 118
-

Psalm 118:1-29 KJV

Psa. 118:1 ¶ O give thanks unto the LORD; for *he is* good: because his mercy *endureth* for ever.

Psa. 118:2 Let Israel now say, that his mercy *endureth* for ever.

Psa. 118:3 Let the house of Aaron now say, that his mercy *endureth* for ever.

Psa. 118:4 Let them now that fear the LORD say, that his mercy *endureth* for ever.

Psa. 118:5 I called upon the LORD in distress: the LORD answered me, *and set me* in a large place.

Psa. 118:6 The LORD *is* on my side; I will not fear: what can man do unto me?

Psa. 118:7 The LORD taketh my part with them that help me: therefore shall I see *my desire* upon them that hate me.

Psa. 118:8 *It is* better to trust in the LORD than to put confidence in man.

Psa. 118:9 *It is* better to trust in the LORD than to put confidence in princes.

Psa. 118:10 All nations compassed me about: but in the name of the LORD will I destroy them.

Psa. 118:11 They compassed me about; yea, they compassed me about: but in the name of the LORD I will destroy them.

Psa. 118:12 They compassed me about like bees; they are quenched as the fire of thorns: for in the name of the LORD I will destroy them.

Psa. 118:13 Thou hast thrust sore at me that I might fall: but the LORD helped me.

Psa. 118:14 The LORD *is* my strength and song, and is become my salvation.

Psa. 118:15 The voice of rejoicing and salvation *is* in the tabernacles of the righteous: the right hand of the LORD doeth valiantly.

Psa. 118:16 The right hand of the LORD is exalted: the right hand of the LORD doeth valiantly.

Psa. 118:17 I shall not die, but live, and declare the works of the LORD.

Psa. 118:18 The LORD hath chastened me sore: but he hath not given me over unto death.

Psa. 118:19 ¶ Open to me the gates of righteousness: I will go into them, *and I* will praise the LORD:

Psa. 118:20 This gate of the LORD, into which the righteous shall enter.

Psa. 118:21 I will praise thee: for thou hast heard me, and art become my salvation.

Psa. 118:22 The stone *which* the builders refused is become the head *stone* of the corner.

Psa. 118:23 This is the LORD'S doing; it *is* marvellous in our eyes.

Psa. 118:24 This *is* the day *which* the LORD hath made; we will rejoice and be glad in it.

Psa. 118:25 Save now, I beseech thee, O LORD: O LORD, I beseech thee, send now prosperity.

Psa. 118:26 Blessed *be* he that cometh in the name of the LORD: we have blessed you out of the house of the LORD.

Psa. 118:27 God *is* the LORD, which hath shewed us light: bind the sacrifice with cords, *even* unto the horns of the altar.

Psa. 118:28 Thou *art* my God, and I will praise thee: *thou art* my God, I will exalt thee.

Psa. 118:29 O give thanks unto the LORD; for *he is* good: for his mercy *endureth* for ever.

- C. **Psalm 118:1** O give thanks unto the LORD; for *he is* good: because his mercy *endureth* for ever.
1. Jesus and His disciples would have sung this in Hebrew (the second half of the verse):
Hallelujah (Students—*Hallelujah*) *Ki tov* (Students—*Ki tov*) *Ki le'olam chasdo* (Students—*Ki le'olam chasdo*)
 2. They would have sung this right before Jesus' crucifixion
 3. This psalm strengthened Him
- D. **Psalm 118: 3** Let the house of Aaron now say, that his mercy *endureth* for ever.—The house of Aaron is the priests.
- E. **Psalm 118:4** Let them now that fear the LORD say, that his mercy *endureth* for ever.—This is you and me!
- F. **Psalm 118:6** The LORD *is* on my side; I will not fear: what can man do unto me?
1. Jesus sang this right before His Crucifixion
 2. He was saying, "What can man do unto Me?" just before they
 - a. Pulled out His beard
 - b. Spit in His face
 - c. Mocked Him
 3. He's the Head and we're the Body, so if He could do it, we can do it.
- G. **Psalm 118:13** Thou hast thrust sore at me that I might fall: but the LORD helped me.—Isaiah 53:10 says that it pleased the Lord to bruise or crush Him and yet He was singing this right before His crucifixion.
- H. **Psalm 118:22** The stone *which* the builders refused is become the head *stone* of the corner.—The cornerstone is singing about himself
- I. **Psalm 118:24** This *is* the day *which* the LORD hath made; we will rejoice and be glad in it.
1. The day about which He is speaking is not a 24-hour period
 2. Paul is talking about a new dispensation
 - a. It has new rules
 - b. It has a new understanding of how to operate
 3. In this dispensation, we are to rejoice and be glad
 4. The Hebrew (transliterated) of "rejoice and be glad" is: *Nagila v'nismecha*
 - a. The song, "Hava Nagila" came from the second part of this verse
 - b. ♪ *Hava Nagila Hava Nagila Hava Nagila ve'nismecha* ♪

- J. **Psalm 118:25** Save now, I beseech thee, O LORD: O LORD, I beseech thee, send now prosperity.—“Save now” is “hosanna”
- K. **Psalm 118:26** Blessed *be* he that cometh in the name of the LORD: we have blessed you out of the house of the LORD.
 - 1. The Hebrew (transliterated) of the first half of this verse is:
Baruch habba beShem Adonai
 - 2. We are singing in the same language in which Jesus sang this Scripture
- L. **Psalm 118:27** God *is* the LORD, which hath shewed us light: bind the sacrifice with cords, *even* unto the horns of the altar.
 - 1. John the Baptist had said, “Behold the Lamb of God which taketh away the sin of the world.” (John 1:29)
 - 2. Here in Psalm 118:27, it says “bind the sacrifice.”
 - a. That sacrifice is Jesus
 - b. He was singing about himself
- M. **Psa. 118:29** O give thanks unto the LORD; *Ki tov. Ki le’olam chasdo*
 - 1. This psalm starts and ends the same way—making a complete circle
 - 2. His blood brought us near to Him
 - 3. His mercy endureth forever
- N. The Jews had been singing this psalm year upon year at Passover—this time, the disciples were singing it with Jesus
- O. We look forward to events such as the rapture—soon it will be reality
- XI. **Psalms, Hymns, and Spiritual Songs and Believers’ Meetings (as explained in *Plans, Purposes & Pursuits* by Kenneth E. Hagin)**
 - A. Just before Campmeeting, Brother Kenneth E. Hagin had a vision
 - 1. It seemed many people were mad about the vision
 - 2. He heard himself praying, “Plans, purposes, pursuits”
 - 3. God took Br. Hagin into the spirit realm, where he saw the Campmeeting
 - a. The Lord said that we must receive His plans and pursue them
 - b. He said that when we’re approaching a move of God, if we don’t get His plans, we’re going to miss His purpose
 - 4. Those who were upset were angry because they thought that Br. Hagin said we can no longer clap in church
 - a. God was really saying that there **is** a time to clap
 - b. He said that sometimes the Spirit is moving, and people start clapping and can no longer hear what God is saying
 - c. He said that clapping is neither praise nor worship
 - d. He added that yielding to the Spirit when He is moving will cause the meeting to attain a higher level of spirituality than clapping would
 - B. Br. Hagin called Sister Billye and asked her to compile a manuscript for him

1. He said that there was a move of the Spirit coming
2. For the move to go the way that God wanted it, we would have to move higher
3. Patsy Cameneti gave a word picture about going higher
 - a. You can take the elevator to the eighth floor and get off
 - b. If the building has 60 floors, you can go all the way to the 60th floor instead
4. Through Br. Hagin, God was telling us how to yield to Him and go higher
- C. The manuscript that Sr. Billye compiled became the book ***Plans, Purposes & Pursuits***
 1. This book tells of how to have believers' meetings
 2. It speaks of God's unique plans for each individual and each church
- D. **Kenneth E. Hagin, *Plans, Purposes & Pursuits***⁶⁴
 1. Kenneth Hagin received a three-hour visitation from the Lord in 1987
 2. The topic which Jesus most emphasized was that, "My plan under the New Covenant is for every believer to be filled with the Holy Spirit." {p 125}
 - a. It's not just for some
 - b. Every member of the 120-member Book of Acts church was filled with the Spirit in the Upper Room
 3. **Ephesians 5:18** And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit.
 - a. An alternate translation of this verse is, "Don't be drunk on *wine*; be drunk on the *Spirit*."
 - b. You can be so drunk on the Spirit that you can act like a drunk person
 - c. When they were filled with the Spirit, they spoke with tongues {p 116}
 - d. Being filled with the Spirit is in the New Testament pattern
 4. **Ephesians 5:19** Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord
 - a. It is God's plan for every believer to maintain a continual infilling of the Holy Spirit {p 130}
 - b. It's His plan for believers to maintain our walk in the Spirit
 - c. It's His plan for us to speak divinely inspired utterances to the Lord
 5. We are to practice speaking to ourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs

⁶⁴ Kenneth E. Hagin, *Plans, Purposes & Pursuits* (Tulsa, OK: Rhema Bible Church, 1989), . {Page numbers in the body of the writing.}

- a. As we pray in the Spirit, a psalm, a hymn or a spiritual song can come up out of our spirit
- b. Something supernatural comes up out of us because we're supernatural beings
- c. It can be a light song
- d. It can be a really deep revelation
6. Br. Hagin practiced this all of the time
 - a. He didn't really sing (he was a monotone), but he spoke the psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs
 - b. They came up out of his spirit
 - c. They often came in believers' meetings
7. Br. Hagin received several psalms that he documented in his book including:
 - a. *Yesterday* {p 140}
 - b. *Today* {p 140-141}
 - c. *Tomorrow* {pp 141-143}
 - d. *Victory* {p 143}
8. We should get in the spirit in our homes
 - a. We should pray and sing in the Holy Spirit
 - b. Something will bubble up inside of us
 - c. Then we should speak it out
- E. **Shelli's testimony of psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs**
 1. Shelli, her husband, Bob, and her two children, Kylie (age 4) and Cody (age 9 months), lived in Tulsa, Oklahoma, in 1985
 2. Bob made a good living working in a job that was dependent on the oil industry
 - a. The oil industry experienced a crash
 - b. Bob's job also closed down
 3. Shelli and Bob had to sell their house, their car, their furniture—everything
 4. Shelli was feeling the weight of their bad circumstances
 - a. Contrary to her character, Kylie began the day crying
 - b. Cody did the same thing
 - c. The Lord said that the children were being affected by the spirit of depression that was affecting her
 - d. She knew that she needed to get victory over it
 5. Cody was a very chubby baby
 - a. Shelli's mother-in-law felt compelled to pray for him to get visible wrists and ankles and a neck
 - b. When he smiled, his eyes disappeared
 - c. His hair stood straight up, even when hair gel was applied
 6. Shelli felt like this situation shouldn't be happening to her

- a. Shelli called her mother (Dr. Billye Brim) and told her of her circumstances
- b. She asked Dr. Billye if the Lord might give a word of encouragement or prophecy for her situation
- c. After praying, Dr. Billye said that the Lord had told her to tell Shelli that, “God has not toppled off the throne.”
7. Shelli continued to seek the Lord and He reminded her that (turn-of-the-century Pentecostal evangelist) Smith Wigglesworth had said, “Faith is an **act**”
 - a. Shelli realized that she had to act like God had not toppled off His throne
 - b. Since it was time to feed the children breakfast, she felt that making oatmeal (with a raisin smiley face) was more faith than serving cold cereal
 - c. As Shelli heated the water, the kids were crying, and Shelli was asking the Lord what to do
 - d. The Lord told her to get drunk in the Spirit
 - e. She asked the Lord to show her how
8. The Lord told Shelli that even though she had been filled with the Holy Spirit when she was 13, she had leaked out
9. He began to show Shelli many Scriptures, including Ephesians 5:18–19
 - a. She saw that you could be filled with the Spirit by speaking
 - b. This would be the speaking of psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs and in other tongues
 - c. She saw a correlation between speaking and drinking—a little speaking meant a little drinking; a lot of speaking meant a lot of drinking
 - d. The Lord told her to connect her tongue to her inner man (her spirit) instead of her intellect
10. Suddenly, a song bubbled up inside Shelli:
 - ♪Someone's in the kitchen with momma ...♪
 - ♪Someone's in the kitchen. I know♪
 - ♪Someone's in the kitchen with Mama. He's the Holy Ghost.♪
11. Shelli realized that the Holy Spirit was in her kitchen and could resurrect the dead areas of her life just as He had raised Jesus
12. She began to sing her song using her oatmeal spoon as a microphone
 - a. Oatmeal was being flung all around the kitchen cabinets
 - b. The things of the world were dropping off her
 - c. She spotted a clump of oatmeal sticking to Cody's straight-up hair
13. Both children were now smiling
 - a. Kylie asked Shelli what had happened to her

- b. Shelli answered, “Your mommy’s drunk”
- c. Kylie said that she and Cody liked it when Shelli was drunk
- 14. Shelli continued to sing and to dance and experienced a breakthrough
- 15. Shelli’s family didn’t have to declare bankruptcy
- 16. They came through the fire and the test
- 17. Awake ... and Christ shall give thee light. (Ephesians 5:14)
 - a. Light is information
 - b. It can tell us what to do
 - c. It can help us to redeem the time
- 18. Be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is. (Ephesians 5:17)
 - a. Understanding to not be drunk with wine
 - b. Understanding to be filled with the Spirit
 - c. Understanding that we need to be speaking and drinking
- 19. In the spirit, Shelli saw a bar
 - a. You don’t stop using money because there are counterfeit twenty-dollar bills
 - b. You don’t decide not to get intoxicated in the Spirit because the world has a counterfeit
 - c. Shelli saw that people in a bar didn’t get drunk by looking at their full glass
 - d. Getting drunk in the Spirit happens when we drink and speak
- F. Br. Hagin believed that the most important thing that God had told him was that everyone should be filled with the Holy Spirit—and get drunk
- G. The way we get there is to speak in psalms, hymns and spiritual songs at home
- H. Doing this prunes off all of the old junk—the song does the cutting away
- I. **Review:** Ephesians 5:19 says, “Speaking to yourself in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs ...” It is connected to Colossians 3:16, which says, “Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom; teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.”
 - 1. these two Scriptures lead us to believers’ meetings
 - 2. We’ve got to do this at home
 - 3. Then when we come together, we will be prepared for the psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs
- J. Putting it into practice ...

SESSION 18 ENDS HERE

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

EPHESIANS

SESSION 19

Plans, Purposes, Pursuits

SESSION 19 STARTS HERE

(This session includes some teaching from *Plans, Purposes & Pursuits*, a dream that Dr. Billye had, and the laying on of hands with a few “words” for each student.)

- I. In Kenneth E. Hagin’s book, *Plans, Purposes & Pursuits*,⁶⁵ he explains how to speak to yourself in psalms, hymns, and spiritual songs {p 145}.
 - A. You must be a born-again believer, with Jesus as your Savior
 - B. You must be baptized in the Holy Spirit, with the evidence of speaking in other tongues
 - C. You need to practice praying in other tongues for extended periods of time
 1. As you pray in the Spirit, you fine-tune your own spirit
 2. Psalms come from your spirit and not your head
 - D. After you have been praying at length in other tongues, a song or utterance will bubble up from the inside
 1. You may sing in tongues, with or without an interpretation
 2. You may speak a word or phrase in your own language that rises up from within
 3. If you speak out what is rising up, it enriches your spiritual life
 - E. A Spirit-filled believer who participates in these things moves to a higher level spiritually
 - F. When Spirit-filled believers who participate in these things at home assemble together, the power of God can manifest in the greatest measure {end of p 145; beginning of p 146}
 - G. God desires to cause us to grow to a place of bringing Him glory
 - H. The Lord told Br. Hagin that doing things differently in the Spirit takes some time and that:
 1. If we continue a while, we will see results
 2. The power will be manifested
 3. His glory will reside in our midst
 4. We’ll be a blessing to many {end of p 146}

⁶⁵ Kenneth E. Hagin, *Plans, Purposes & Pursuits* (Tulsa, OK: Rhema Bible Church, 1989). {Page numbers in the body of the writing.}

- II. Dr. Billye Brim was instructed by the Lord to lay hands on the students
 - A. She was told to follow the pattern of a night vision that she once had received
 - 1. In a night vision, a person has a vision while sleeping
 - 2. When the person awakens, they still see the vision
 - 3. While seeing the vision, the Holy Spirit tells the person about it
 - B. This vision involved Brother Lester Sumrall
 - 1. Dr. Billye had edited some books for Br. Lester
 - 2. Br. Lester had been in close association with Smith Wigglesworth
 - 3. He had a great understanding of his authority as a believer
 - C. In the vision, Br. Lester came back from Heaven
 - 1. He looked good, but not young
 - 2. He had long white hair
 - 3. Brother Kenneth Copeland said he appeared as an “elder”
 - D. Br. Lester was having a meeting on Earth
 - 1. He was standing at the end of long lines
 - 2. He was laying hands on the people
 - 3. His purpose was to give an impartation concerning the authority of the believer
 - 4. She did not know any of the people in the line until the last two
 - a. The second-last person was her grandson Branden
 - b. The last person was Dr. Billye herself
 - c. The impartation of an anointing for the authority of the believer went into her
 - E. In another separate, but related, vision, Dr. Billye spoke to Jesus
 - 1. Jesus told Dr. Billye that He had led her into association with Kenneth E Hagin because:
 - a. Their two primary callings were the same
 - b. They were both called to the office of prophet and teacher
 - 2. Jesus told Dr. Billye that He had led her into association with Lester Sumrall because:
 - a. Jesus wanted Dr. Billye to receive from Br. Lester in the area of the authority of the believer
 - b. He wanted her to receive from Br. Lester in things concerning Israel
 - F. One of the fundamental doctrines of Jesus Christ is the laying on of hands (Hebrews 6:2)
 - 1. Laying on of hands can be found in many places in the Bible
 - 2. One notable example is that the same Spirit that was on Moses was also upon Joshua as a result of Moses laying his hands on Joshua (Deuteronomy 34:9)
 - G. Dr. Billye explained her expectations of this ministry time

1. As she laid her hands on each one, she believed that there would be an impartation concerning the authority of the believer
 2. She believed that this impartation would cause each one to move to a higher level
 3. She believed it would affect the whole nation
- H. In the process of the ministry time, Dr. Billye received a few words, that applied to all
1. Jesus was using Dr. Billye's hands, but He was the One doing the laying on of hands
 2. Each student would walk in a new realm of higher authority, speaking with a weightier voice
 3. The whole Body of Christ is going to benefit from what took place there that day

SESSION 19 ENDS WITH A TIME OF PRAYER WITH STUDENTS

[RETURN TO TABLE OF CONTENTS](#)

The Book of Ephesians

183 The Hebrew Language Compilation

HL1	Cover Page	183
HL2-3	Teach Yourself the Hebrew Alphabet (without pronunciation)	184
HL4	Teach Yourself the Hebrew Alphabet (with pronunciation)	186
HL5	Counting in Hebrew	187
HL6	The Hebrew Root Has Three Consonants—Usually... ..	188
HL7	The Amen Wheel	189
HL8	Be Whole, Complete	190
HL 9	The Shalom Wheel	191
HL10	Truth—EMET	192
HL11	Ish—Ishah	193
H12	Chesed, Emet, Brit	194
H13	Chasdo (His Chesed)	195
H14	Alef Bet Song	196
H15	Tohu v’Bohu	197

199 Maps

M1	The Cloverleaf Old World Map	200
M2	The Middle East	201
M3	New Testament Cities	202
M4	Mediterranean and Aegean Seas (with Ephesus)	203

205 Reference Pages and Photos

R1	The Seven Days	206
R2	God’s Sacred Calendar	207
R3	Photos of Ephesus	208

211 The Four Kingdoms

Babylon (4KB)

4KB1	Image of Nebuchadnezzar’s Dream	212
4KB2	Map: The Babylonian Empire	213

Medo-Persian (4KMP)

4KMP1	Map: The Persian Empire	214
-------	-------------------------------	-----

Greek (4KG)

4KG1	Map: The Greek Empire (Alexander the Great)	215
------	---	-----

Roman (4KR)

4KR1	Map: The Roman Empire.....	216
4KR2	The Roman Empire in the Age of Augustus	217
4KR3	The Roman Empire in the Early Second Century.....	218
4KR4	An Image of the Triumphal Procession After the Victory Over the Jews by Titus and Vespasian.....	219
4KR5	The Triumphal Procession: Outtakes and Comments on History	220
4KR6	The Roman Destruction of Jerusalem A.D. 70	221

223 Glossary

G1	Parousia.....	224
----	---------------	-----

225 Companion Bible Appendixes

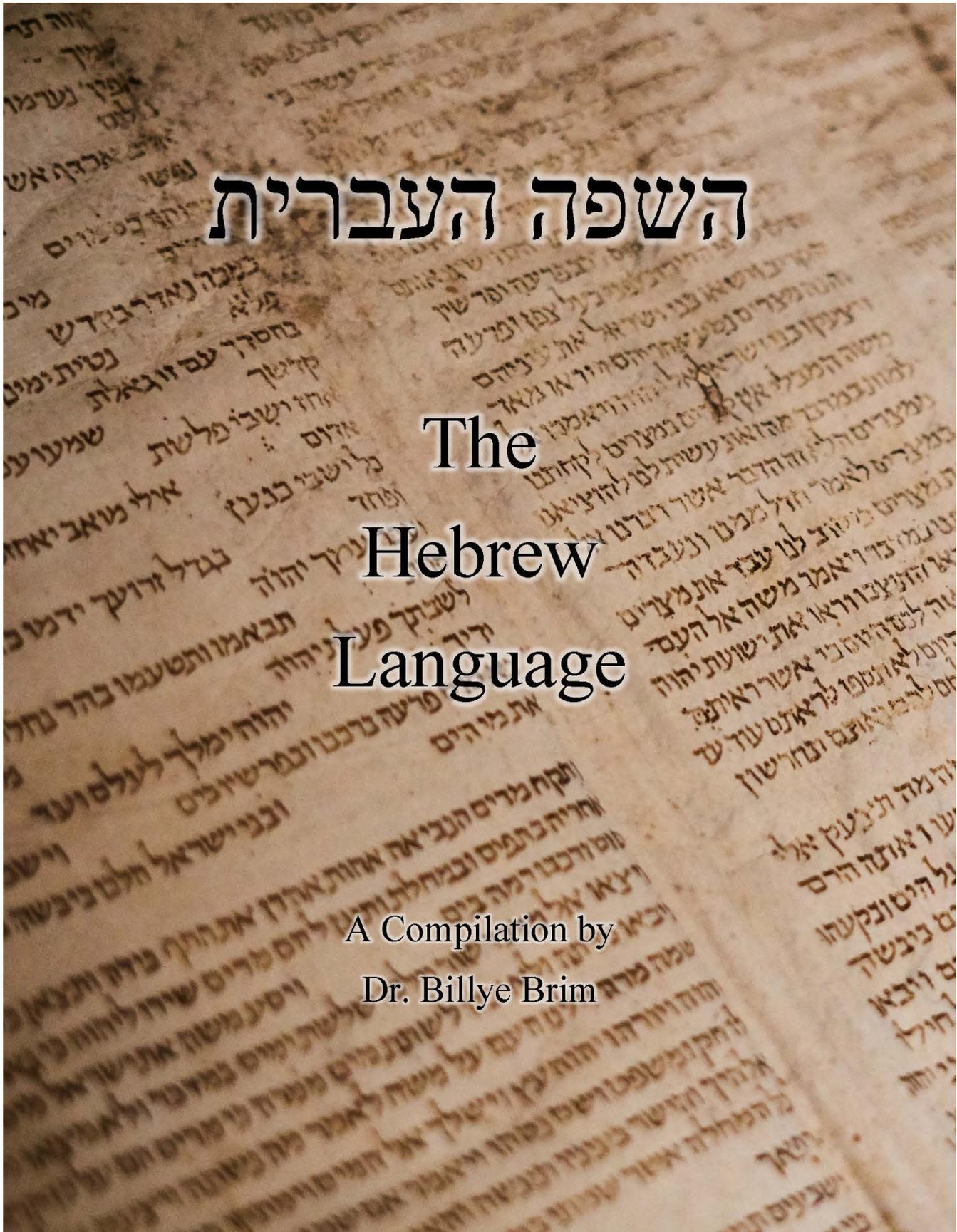
CB1	Genesis 1.....	226
CB2	2 Peter 3:1-18	227
CB3	25: The Nephilim	229
CB4	129: Synonymous Words for “World,” “Earth,” etc. ..	231
CB5	146: The Foundation of the World.....	233
CB6	172: Synonymous Words for “Power,” etc.	235
CB7	186: Church (Greek <i>ekklēsia</i>).....	236
CB8	193: The “Mystery”	238

243 Lesson Appendixes

A1	The World That Then Was	244
A2	Lucifer’s Fall.....	249
A3	Tongues/Interpretation through Kenneth Hagin	253
A4	Kenneth Hagin: Word of Wisdom: Word of Knowledge of What the Holy Spirit Is Doing	254
A5	Tommy Hicks: End-Time Vision	258
A6	Jeanne Wilkerson: Prophetic Utterance	263
A7	Kenneth Copeland: “Ecstasy” Prophecy.....	264

267 Minibooks

God’s Promises of the Land to Israel.....	268
Judgment of the Nations for How They Treat Israel	295



השפה העברית

The Hebrew Language

A Compilation by
Dr. Billye Brim

TEACH YOURSELF THE HEBREW ALPHABET — consonants

Orthography — few principles:

בוא אל הארץ
←

- from right to left.
- round letters — mostly clockwise.
- separate letters — not joined.
- in hebrew writing we use only "script".
- in hebrew there are no letters for vowels.
- You will learn the vocalization system in class.
- "final" letter — at the end of a word only.

SCRIPT FORM	NAME OF LETTER	PRINT FORM	SOUND
	Aleph		A . 1
	Bet		B . 2
	Gimel		G . 3
	Dalet		D . 4
	Hay		H . 5
	Vav		V . 6
	Zayin		Z . 7
	Chet		CH . 8
	Tet		T . 9
	Yod		Y . 10
	Kaf		K . 11
	Final Kaf		
	Lamed		L . 12

It would be to the advantage of any "beginner" to learn to write the Hebrew Alphabet (script) before starting a course at Ulpan Akiva.

"A LETTER A DAY TAKES YOU A LONG WAY"

	SCRIPT FORM	NAME OF LETTER	PRINT FORM	SOUND
	מ	Mem	מ	M .13
	ם	Final Mem	ם	
	נ	Nun	נ	N .14
	ן	Final Nun	ן	
	ס	Sameh	ס	S .15
	ע	Ayin	ע	A .16
	פ	Pay	פ	P .17
	ף	Final Pay	ף	
	צ	Tzadee	צ	TS .18
	ץ	Final Tzadee	ץ	
	ק	Kof	ק	K,Q .19
	ר	Resh	ר	R .20
	ש	Shin	ש	SH .21
	ת	Tav	ת	T .22

Teach Yourself the Hebrew Alphabet

*from right to left

* separate letters—not joined

*in modern Hebrew writing, we use only "script"

Letter Name	Book Print	Pronunciation	Block	Script	Number Represented
1 Aleph	א	Silent Letter	א	א	1
2 Bet	ב	B as in Ball	ב	ב	2
Vet	ב	V as in Veil	ב	ב	
3 Gimel	ג	G as in Gate	ג	ג	3
4 Dalet	ד	D as in Dog	ד	ד	4
5 Heh	ה	H as in Heart	ה	ה	5
6 Vav	ו	V as in Veil	ו	ו	6
7 Zayin	ז	Z as in Zoo	ז	ז	7
8 Chet	ח	CH as in BaCH	ח	ח	8
9 Tet	ט	T as in Toy	ט	ט	9
10 Yod	י	Y as in Yolk	י	י	10
11 Kaf	כ	K as in Kite	כ	כ	20
	כ	CH as in BaCH	כ	כ	
	ך	CH as in BaCH	ך	ך	
12 Lamed	ל	L as in Leg	ל	ל	30
13 Mem	מ	M as in Map	מ	מ	40
	ם	M as in Map	ם	ם	
14 Nun	נ	N as in Nose	נ	נ	50
	ן	N as in Nose	ן	ן	
15 Samech	ס	S as in Sun	ס	ס	60
16 Ayin	ע	Silent Letter	ע	ע	70
17 Pay	פ	P as in Pan	פ	פ	80
	פ	F as in Flag	פ	פ	
	ף	F as in Flag	ף	ף	
18 Tsade	צ	TS as in caTS	צ	צ	90
	ץ	TS as in caTS	ץ	ץ	
19 Koof	ק	K as in Kite	ק	ק	100
20 Resh	ר	R as in Rouge	ר	ר	200
21 Shin	ש	SH as in SHip	ש	ש	300
	ש	S as in Sun	ש	ש	
22 Tav	ת	T as in Toy	ת	ת	400

Counting in Hebrew

1	achat	אחת
2	shtayim	שת"מ
3	shalosh	שלוש
4	arba	ארבא
5	chamesh	חמש
6	shesh	שש
7	sheva	שבא
8	shmoneh	שמונה
9	tesha	תשא
10	eser	אשר

THE HEBREW ROOT HAS THREE CONSONANTS—USUALLY

We now come to the central theme of all word building in Hebrew; it is the central rhythm of the whole, vast, far-flung structure of the Hebrew language.

This is it:

Practically all words in Hebrew go back to a root—and this root must have in it three consonants. You can do anything you want to the root: you can use it in any verb form or tense, you can turn it into any one of ten or twenty or more nouns. You can make it an adjective, adverb, preposition, or what you will.... *No matter what you do you will always see staring you in the face the three consonants of the root. You can never escape them.*

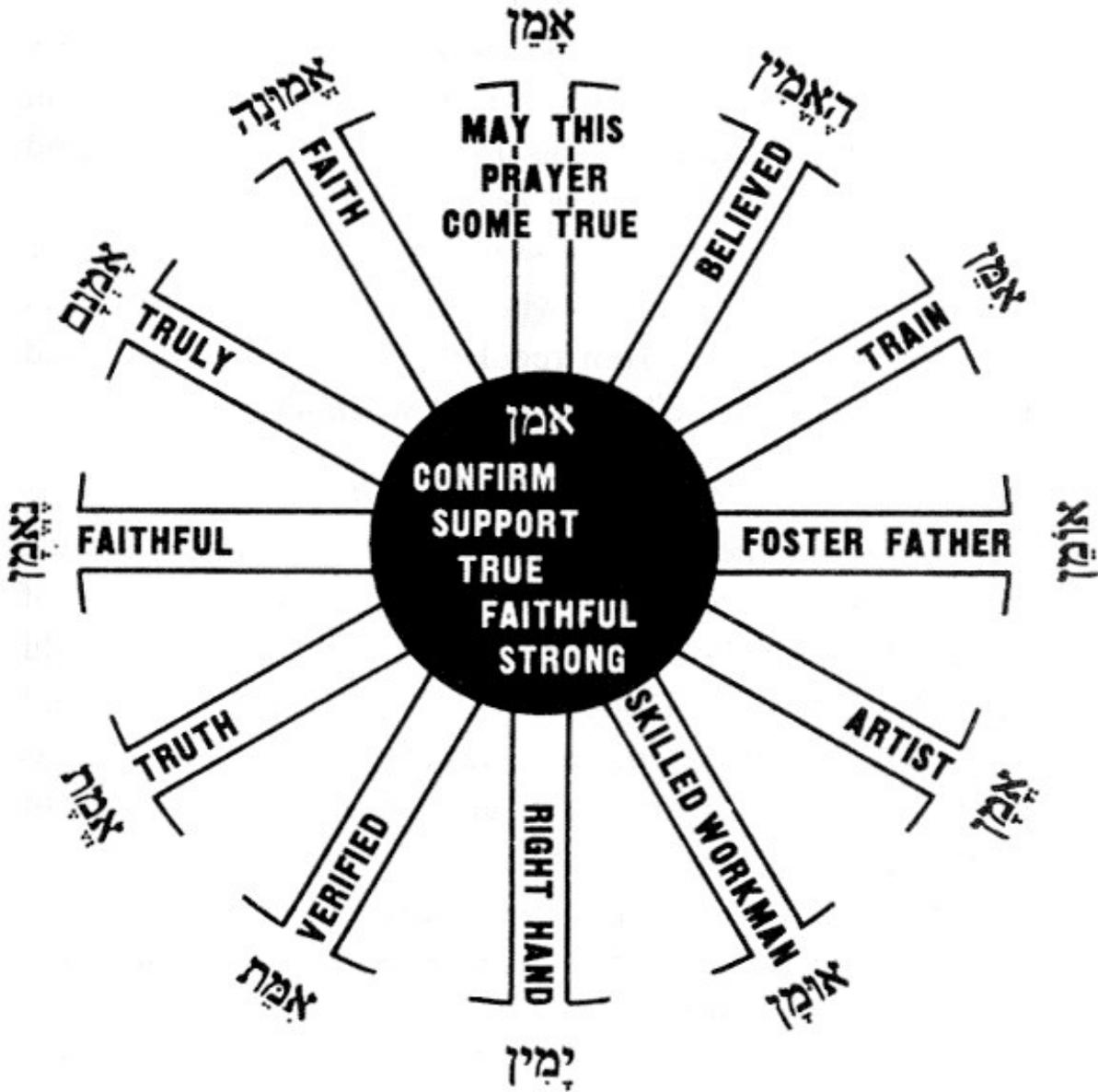
And equally important:

No matter what you do with the root, no matter into what word you turn it—that word must carry in it something of the meaning of the root. This is the irresistible logic of all word-building in Hebrew. It is by far the most important and most fundamental law of the Hebrew language.

From
HOW THE HEBREW LANGUAGE GREW
by Edward Horowitz
KTAV Publishing House, Inc. Copyright 1960, 1988.
Chapter 3

THE AMEN WHEEL

The following chart illustrates how the three-letter root אמן (amen) serves as the hub of a family of words (pictured as spokes on a wheel). All words in the אמן family have the root meaning confirm, support, true, faithful, or strong.



From
 HOW THE HEBREW LANGUAGE GREW
 Page 27
 by Edward Horowitz
 Copyright 1960, 1988. KTAV Publishing House, Inc.

שָׁלֵם—BE WHOLE, COMPLETE

It probably never occurred to you and it may faintly amuse you to know that when someone says to you inquiringly “שָׁלוֹם לְךָ?”—he is actually asking you whether you are whole, complete, in one piece. They want assurance that no part of you—fingers, toes, legs, arms, etc.—is missing or broken. The root meaning of our familiar greeting word שָׁלוֹם is שָׁלֵם whole, complete. If you’re whole, you’re probably well and at peace.

הִשְׁתַּלֵּם — the reflexive, means to perfect oneself.

שָׁלַם — to pay for something, carries the meaning, to restore or make whole again. By paying a person for what you took from him you fill the gap you created in his possessions when you first took it.

שְׁלֵמוֹת — entirety

תְּשַׁלֵּם — payment; שְׁלֵמוֹן — payment, may mean “bribe.”

הִשְׁלִים — the hifil causative pattern could mean either “made peace” or “made whole,” the word going back to either שָׁלוֹם or שָׁלֵם.

It is interesting to note that the English greeting “Hail” has the same meaning as שָׁלוֹם, namely “being whole.” When someone says, “Hail,” he is wishing that you are whole. “Hale” in the expression “hale and hearty” is from the same word as “hail.” The Hebrew word שָׁלוֹם has given rise to a number of English words. There is Salem, a town in Massachusetts. “Salaam” is the cry of greeting spoken to a ruler or prince; it is usually accompanied by deep bows. Scholars say the English word of farewell “so-long” comes from “salaam.”

From
HOW THE HEBREW LANGUAGE GREW
by Edward Horowitz
KTAV Publishing House, Inc. Copyright 1960, 1988.

Chapter 4
Some Interesting Hebrew Roots

אמת

EMeT

TRUTH

Truth requires for its essence the first letter א (alef), the “One” standing for the Almighty. Remove the initial letter in אמת (EMeT) and all that remains is מת (MT)*.

Without God there can be no truth. In its place only death and destruction remain.

*Brim Note: the word מת (MT) means “death” “died.”

From
THE SECRET OF HEBREW WORDS
by Benjamin Blech
Rowan & Littlefield Publishers, Inc. Copyright 2001.

ISH (אִישׁ)—ISHAH (אִשָּׁה)

Genesis 1:26–28 KJV

Gen. 1:26 And God said, Let us make **man** in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

Gen. 1:27 So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.

Gen. 1:28 And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.

Genesis 2:15 KJV And the LORD God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to **keep** it.

Man = Adam = אָדָם

guard = keep =

8104. שָׁמַר **shamar**, *shaw-mar'*; a primitive root; properly, to hedge about (as with thorns), i.e. guard; generally, to protect, attend to, etc.:—beware, be circumspect, take heed (to self), keep(-er, self), mark, look narrowly, observe, preserve, ... watch(-man).

Genesis 2:21–23 KJV

Gen. 2:21 And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof;

Gen. 2:22 And the **rib**, which the LORD God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man.

Gen. 2:23 And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called **Woman**, because she was taken out of **Man**.

Woman =

802. אִשָּׁה **'ishshah**, *ish-shaw'*; feminine of 376 a woman

Man also =

376. אִישׁ **'iysh**, *eesh*; a man as an individual or a male person

The word translated “rib” in this chapter is not the Hebrew word for rib. It is the Hebrew word for “side”:

6763. צֵלַע **tsela**, *tsay-law'*; a side, literally (of a person) or figuratively

חסד ואמת

CHESED V'EMET

חֶסֶד

Chesed

אֱמֶת

EMET Truth

חֶסֶד וְאֱמֶת

Chesed v'EMET

בְּרִית

Brit, Covenant

יְהוָה

Yehoveh, Jehovah, Yahweh

ArtScroll, Chumash, Stone Edition

This Name represents the Eternity of God for it is composed of the letters that spell, He was, He is, and He will be, meaning that God's being is timeless ... However, יהוה is more than a descriptive Name; it is a proper noun, for it is the actual Name of God, and is known as *Shem HaMeforah*, or the "Ineffable Name."

חסדו

CHASDO (חַסְדּוֹ) (His Chesed)

Hallelujah! Key tov. Key l'olam chasdo.

הַלְלוּיָהּ כִּי-טוֹב כִּי לְעוֹלָם חַסְדּוֹ

(The vav [ו] at the end of *Chesed* represents the vowel *holem* [וְ], the “ō” sound. This indicates His, or belonging to Him.)

For example:

Shem(i)	-> Shmi	= My Name
Shem(cha)	-> Shemcha	= Your Name (masculine)
Shem(ech)	-> Shmech	= Your Name (feminine)
Shem(o)	-> Shmo	= His Name
Shem(a)	-> Shma	= Her Name

Chip's Question to me...

A student of Hebrew came to the church and said, “The Scripture your mother teaches and its Hebrew translation should not be translated ‘mercy.’ It should be translated ‘grace.’”

In February 2019 someone sent me an old book

Hesed in the Bible by Nelson Glueck.

English translation printed in 1967 by The Hebrew Union College Press.

First published in Germany in July 1927.

Here I found that neither “mercy” nor “grace” gives the complete meaning of this wonderful word.

ALEF BET SONG

(with both block print and cursive letters)

Alef	Bet	Gimel	Dalet	Heh	Vav	Zayin	
א א	ב ב	ג ג	ד ד	ה ה	ו ו	ז ז	
Chet	Tet	Yod	Kaf	Lamed	Mem	Nun	Samech
ח ח	ט ט	י י	כ כ	ל ל	מ מ	נ נ	ס ס
Lamed	Mem	Nun	Samech	Ayin			
ל ל	מ מ	נ נ	ס ס	ע ע			
Lamed	Mem	Nun	Samech	Ayin			
ל ל	מ מ	נ נ	ס ס	ע ע			
Pe	Tzadi	Koof	Resh	Shin	Tav		
פ פ	צ צ	ק ק	ר ר	ש ש	ת ת		
Koof	Resh	Shin	Tav				
ק ק	ר ר	ש ש	ת ת				

TOHU V'BOHU

Without Form and Void

בְּרֵאשִׁית 1:1–2

א בְּרֵאשִׁית, בָּרָא אֱלֹהִים, אֶת הַשָּׁמַיִם, וְאֶת הָאָרֶץ. 1 In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.

ב וְהָאָרֶץ, הִיְתָה תְהוֹ וְבוֹהוּ, וְחֹשֶׁךְ, עַל-פְּנֵי תְהוֹם; וְרוּחַ אֱלֹהִים, מְרַחֶפֶת עַל-פְּנֵי הַמַּיִם. 2 And the earth was **without form [tohu], and void [bohu]**; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.

יְשַׁעְיָהוּ 45:18

יח כִּי כֹה אָמַר-יְהוָה בּוֹרֵא הַשָּׁמַיִם הוּא הָאֱלֹהִים, יֹצֵר הָאָרֶץ וְעָשָׂה הוּא כּוֹנֵנָה--**לֹא-תְהוֹ** בְּרֵאשִׁית, לְשַׁבֵּת יְצָרָה; אֲנִי יְהוָה, וְאֵין עוֹד. 18 For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens, He is God; that formed the earth and made it, He established it, He created it **not a waste**, He formed it to be inhabited: I am the LORD, and there is none else.

יֵרֵמְיָהוּ 4:23–27

כג רָאִיתִי, אֶת-הָאָרֶץ, וְהִנֵּה-תְהוֹ, וְהִנֵּה-**וְבוֹהוּ**; וְאֵל-הַשָּׁמַיִם, וְאֵין אֹרֶם. 23 I beheld the earth, and, lo, it was **waste and void**; and the heavens, and they had no light.

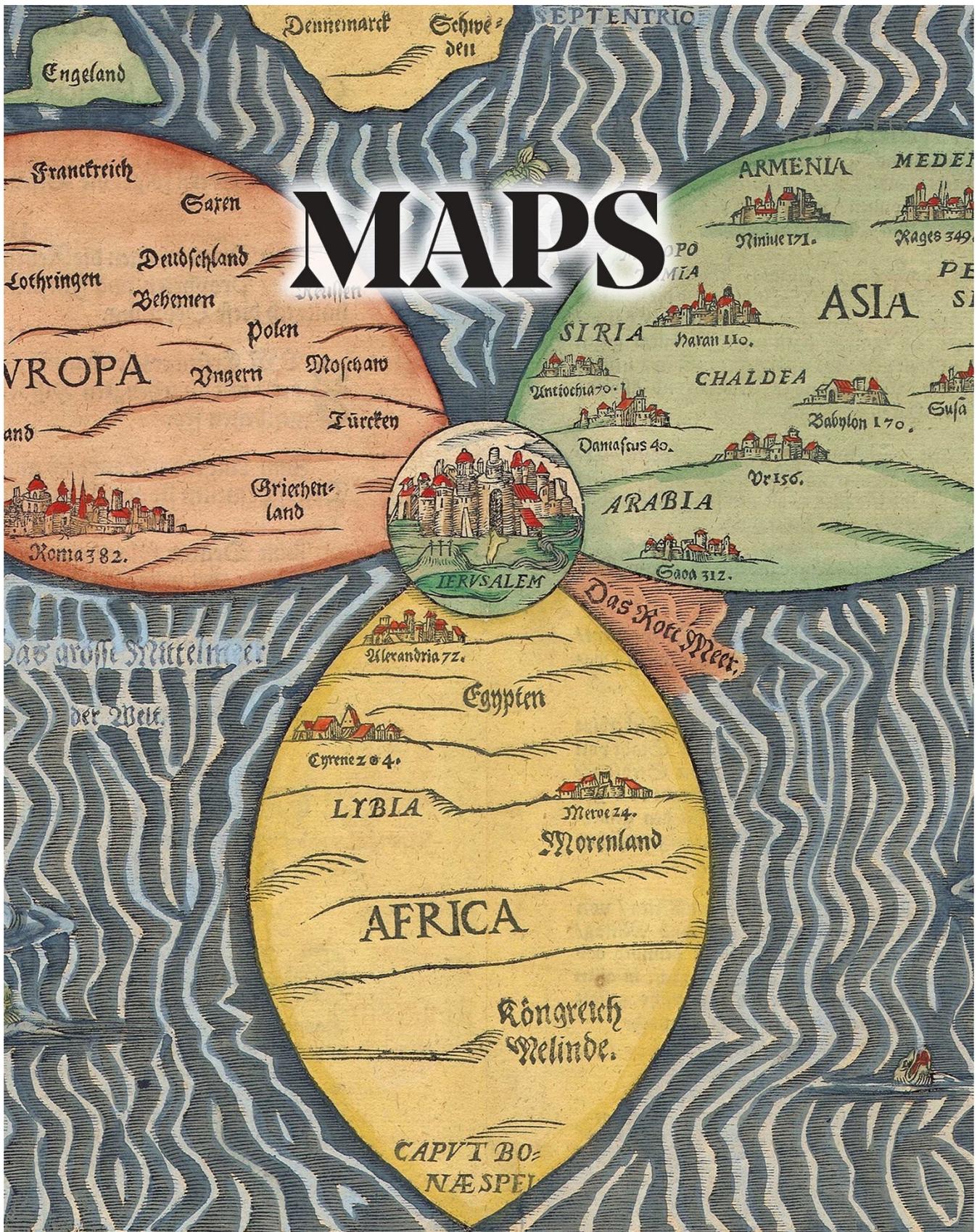
כד רָאִיתִי, הַהָרִים, וְהִנֵּה, רֹעֲשִׁים; וְכָל-הַגְּבָעוֹת, הִתְקַלְקְלוּ. 24 I beheld the mountains, and, lo, they trembled, and all the hills moved to and fro.

כה רָאִיתִי, וְהִנֵּה אֵין הָאָדָם; וְכָל-עוֹף הַשָּׁמַיִם, נָדְדוּ. 25 I beheld, and, lo, there was no man, and all the birds of the heavens were fled.

כו רָאִיתִי, וְהִנֵּה הַכַּרְמֶל, הַמְדֻבָּר; וְכָל-עָרָיו, נִתְצוּ מִפְּנֵי יְהוָה--מִפְּנֵי, חֲרוֹן אַפּוֹ. {ס} 26 I beheld, and, lo, the fruitful field was a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the LORD, and before His fierce anger. {S}

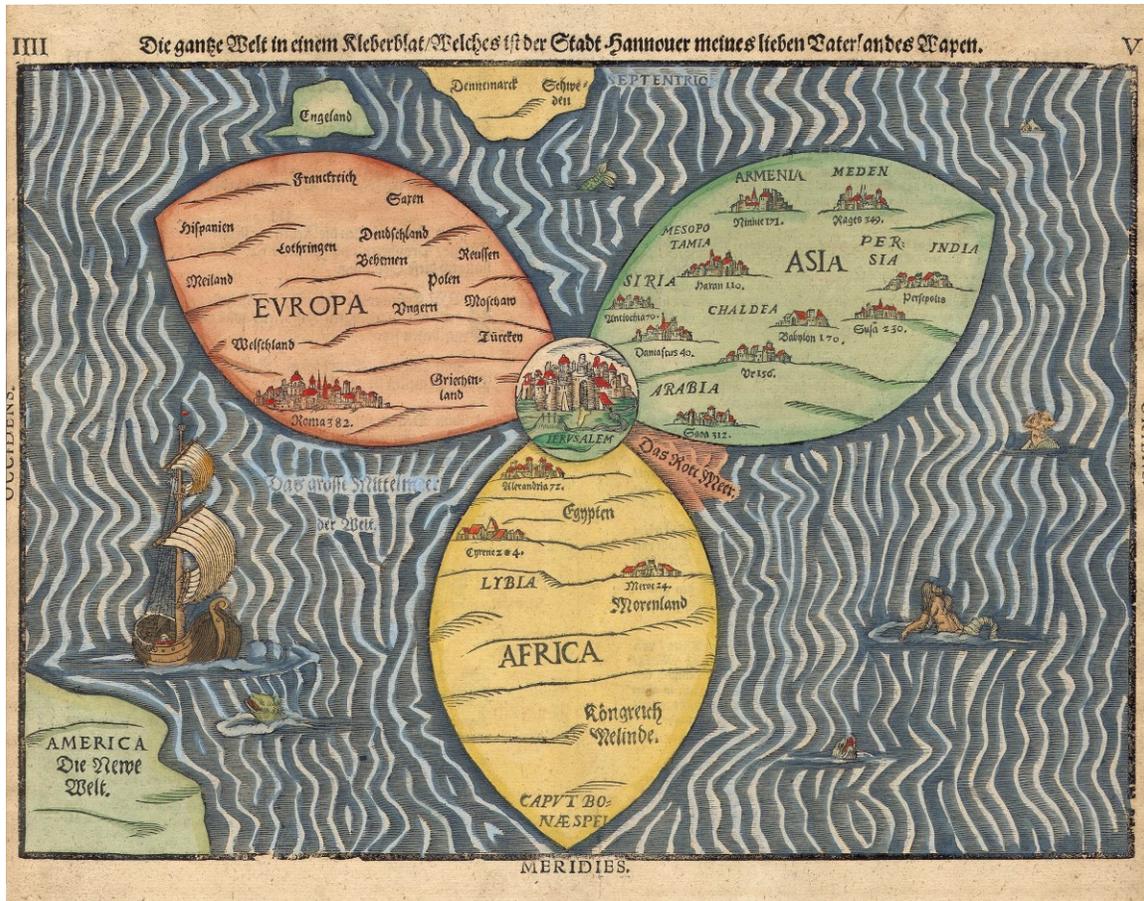
כז כִּי-כֹה אָמַר יְהוָה, שְׁמָמָה תִּהְיֶה כָּל-הָאָרֶץ; וְכֹלָהּ, לֹא אֶעֱשֶׂה. 27 For thus saith the LORD: The whole land shall be desolate; yet will I not make a full end.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)



CLOVERLEAF MAP

By Pastor Heinrich Bünting



This stylized world map was created by German pastor Heinrich Bünting. Published in 1581, the map depicts Jerusalem as the center of the world. The caption in German is translated:

"The entire world in the shape of a clover-leaf, which is the emblem of the city of Hannover, my beloved homeland."

The cloverleaf was part of the coat of arms of his home town of Hanover, which includes a three-leaf clover.

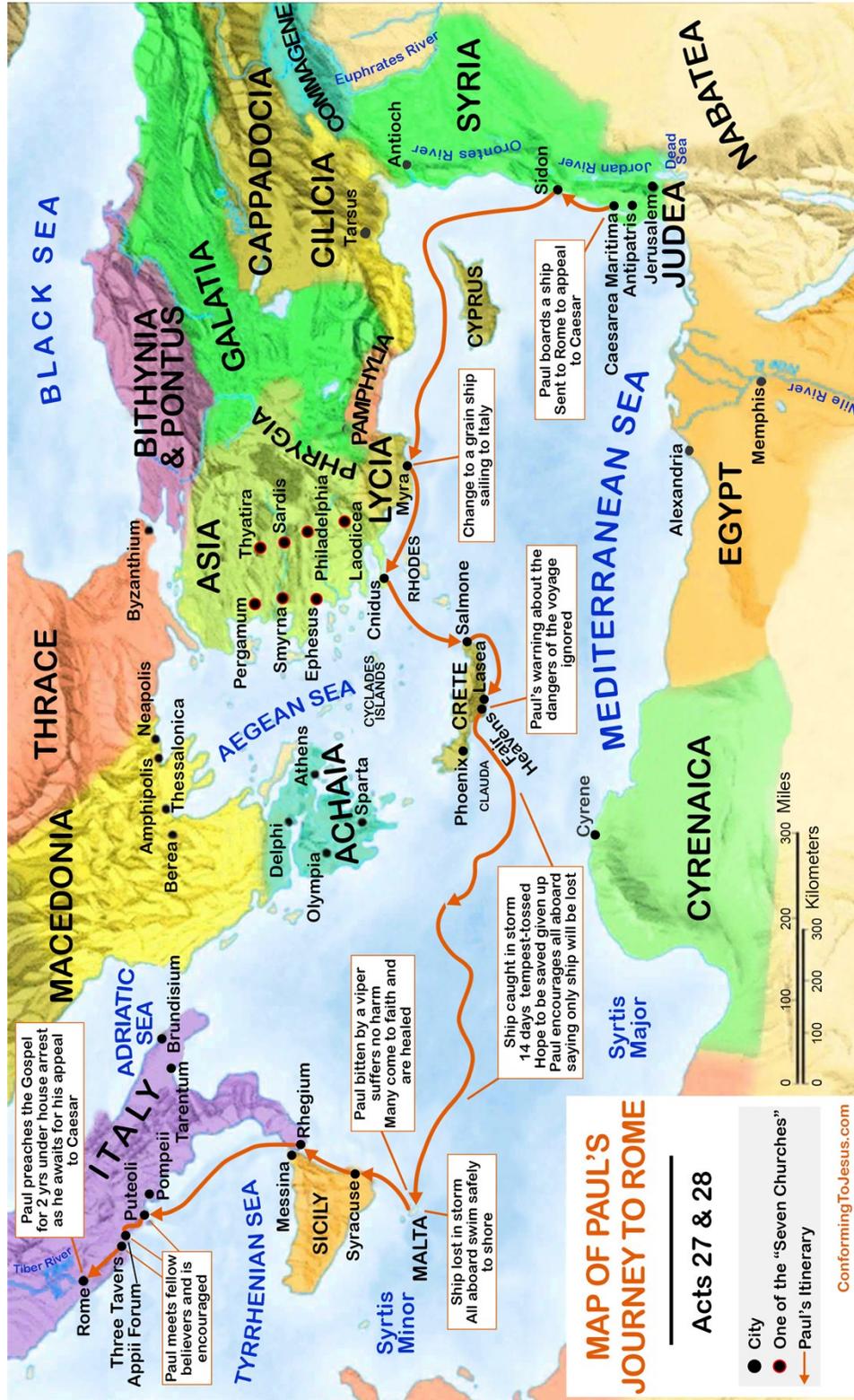
[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

THE MIDDLE EAST



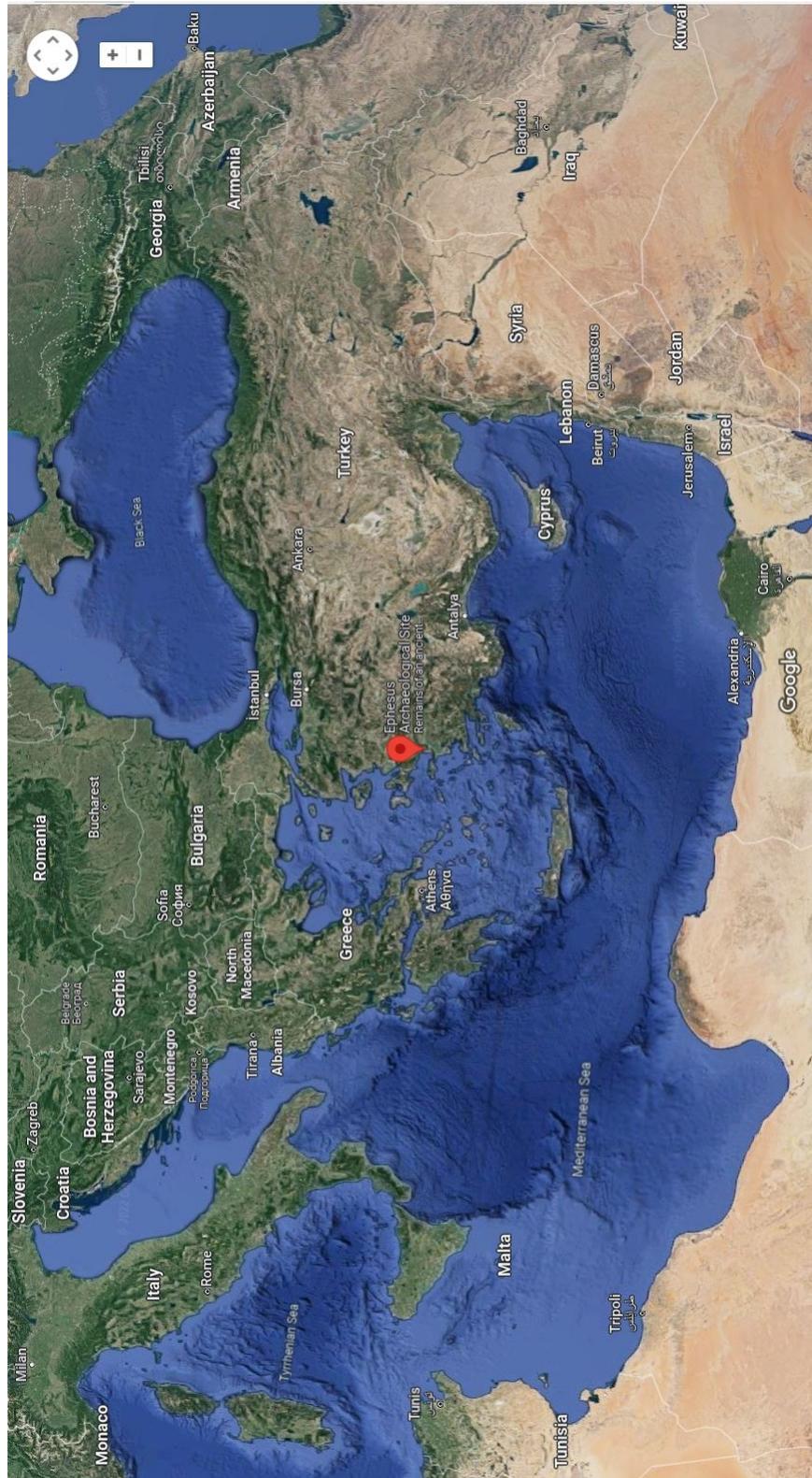
[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

NEW TESTAMENT CITIES

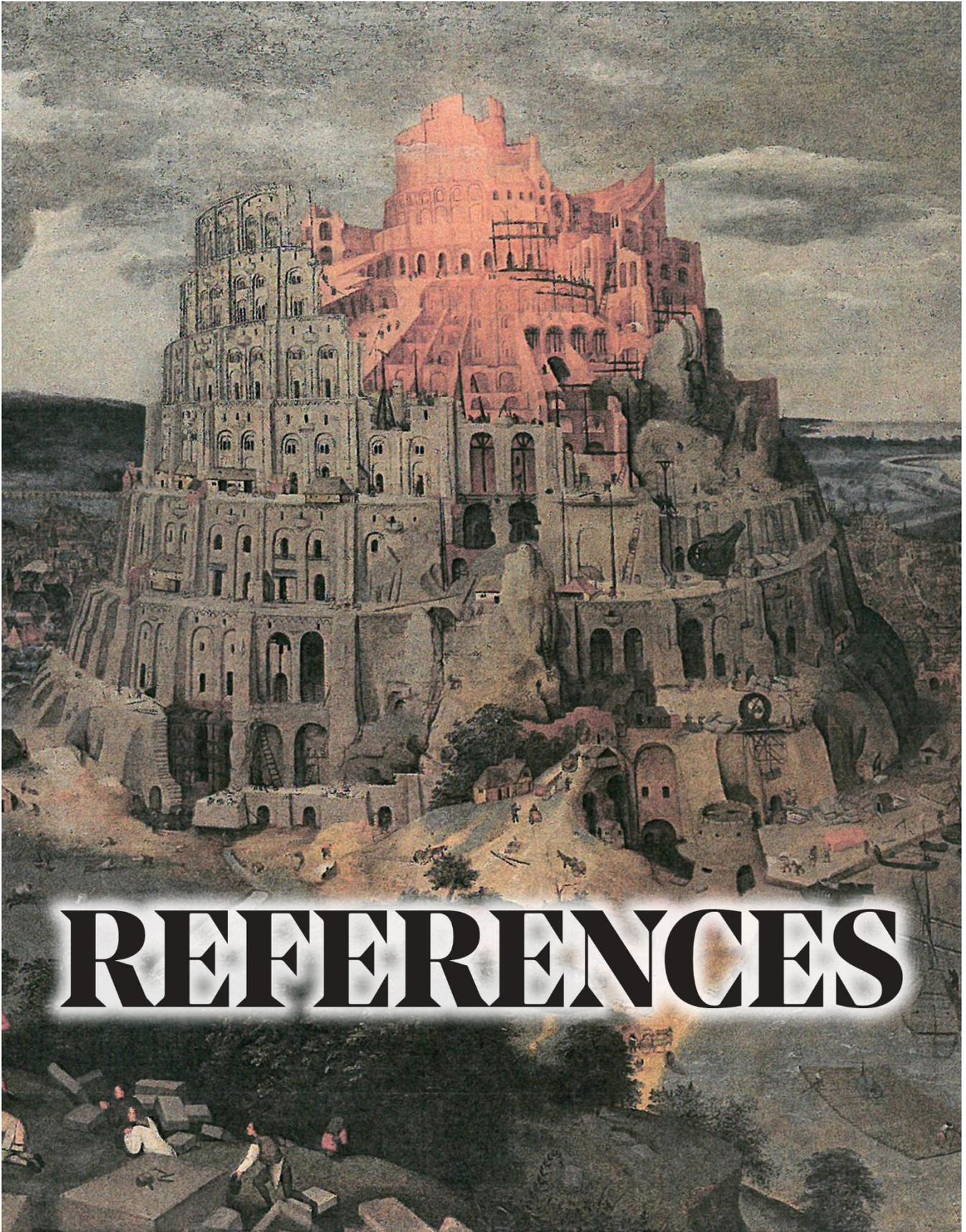


[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

THE MEDITERRANEAN SEA (SHOWING EPHESUS)

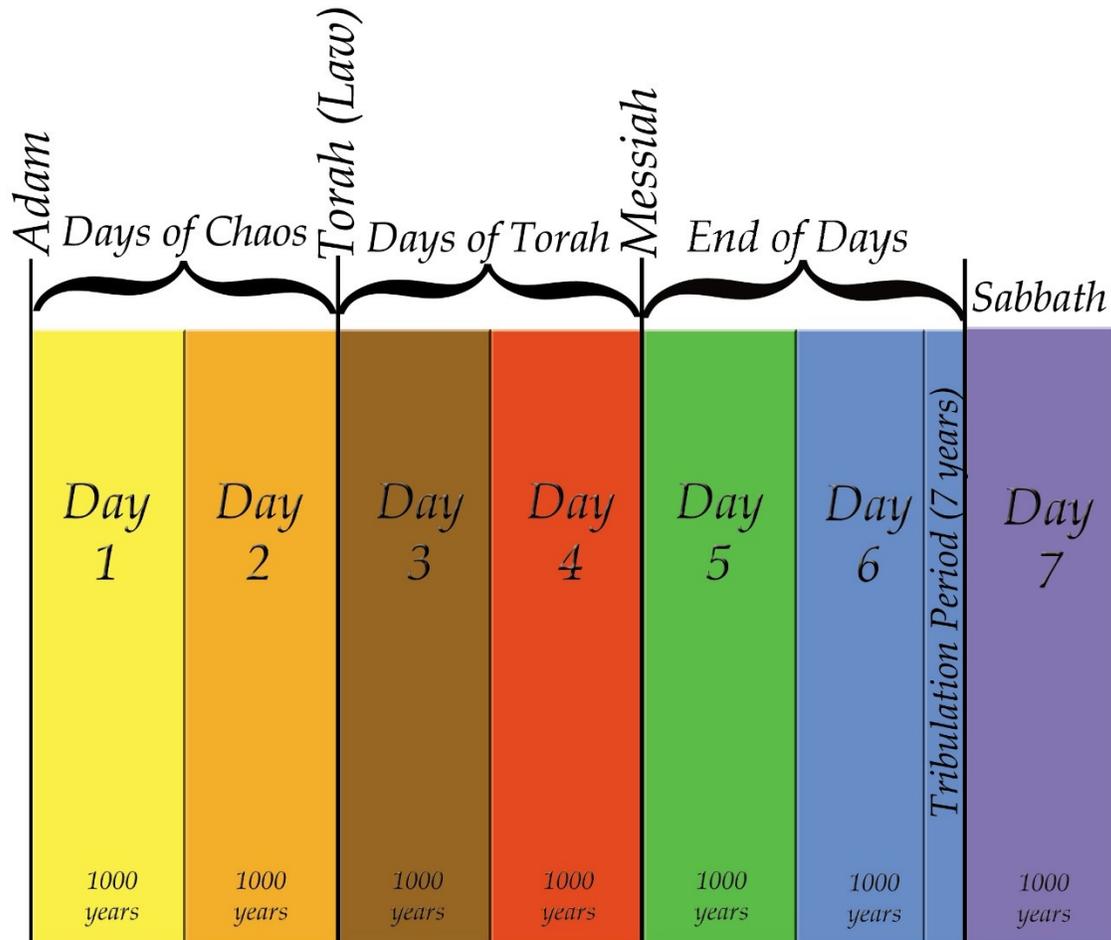


[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)



REFERENCES

SEVEN DAYS CHART



Babylonian Talmud, Sanhedrin 97a.14

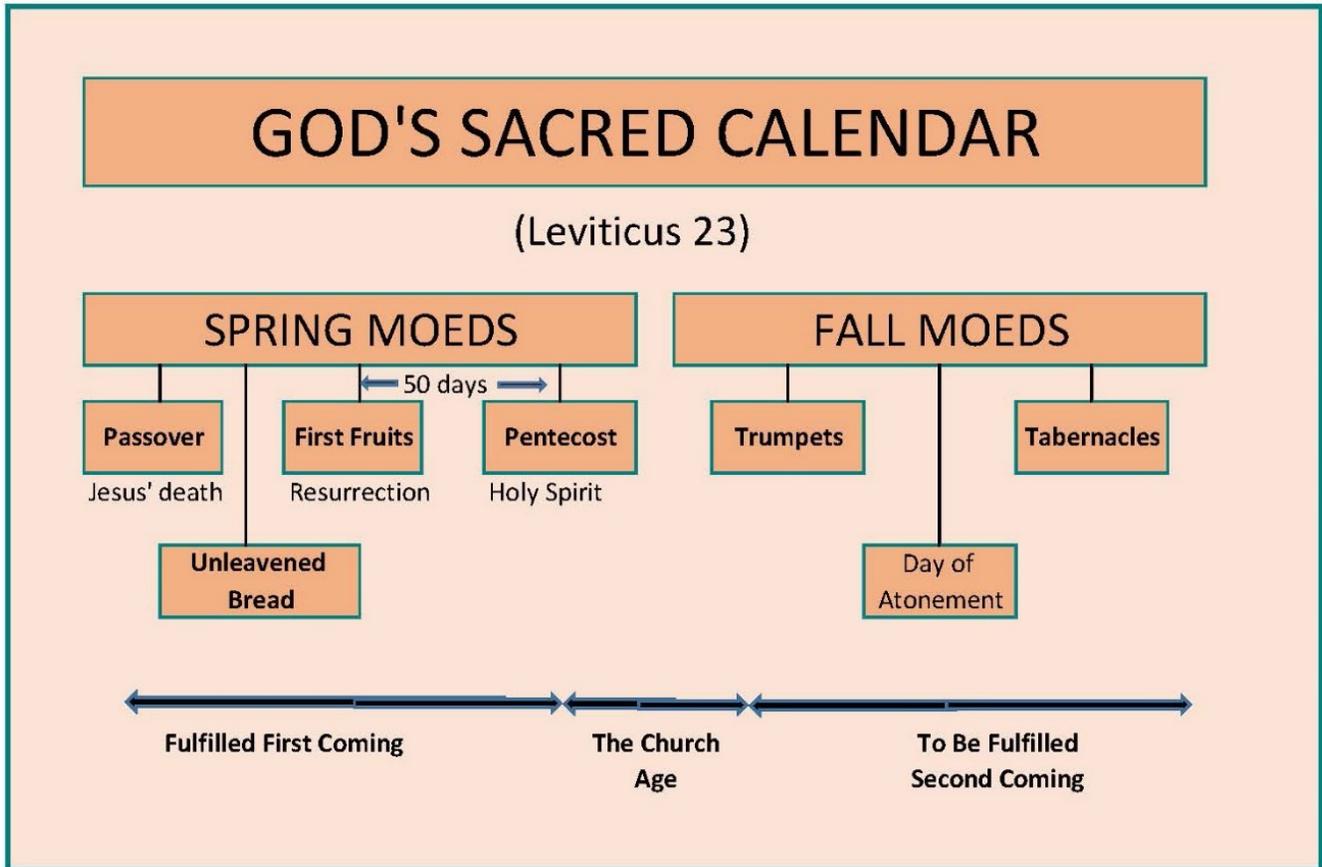
The school of Eliyahu taught: Six thousand years is the duration of the world. Two thousand of the six thousand years are characterized by chaos; two thousand years are characterized by Torah, from the era of the Patriarchs until the end of the mishnaic period; and two thousand years are the period of the coming of the Messiah.

Babylonian Talmud, Sanhedrin 97b.1

That is the course that history was to take, **but due to our sins that** time frame **increased**. The Messiah did not come after four thousand years passed, and furthermore, the years **that elapsed since** then, which were to have been the messianic era, **have elapsed**.

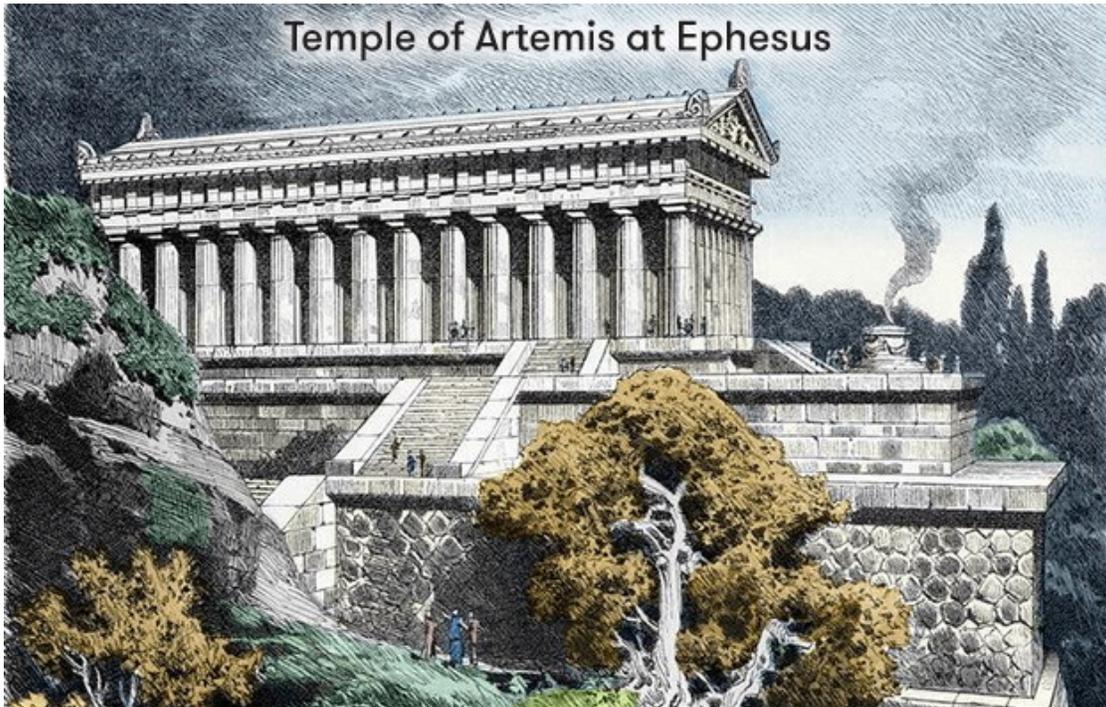
[https://www.sefaria.org/Sanhedrin.97a.14?ven=William Davidson Edition - English&vhe=Wikisource Talmud Bavli&lang=bi](https://www.sefaria.org/Sanhedrin.97a.14?ven=William%20Davidson%20Edition%20-%20English&vhe=Wikisource%20Talmud%20Bavli&lang=bi)

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

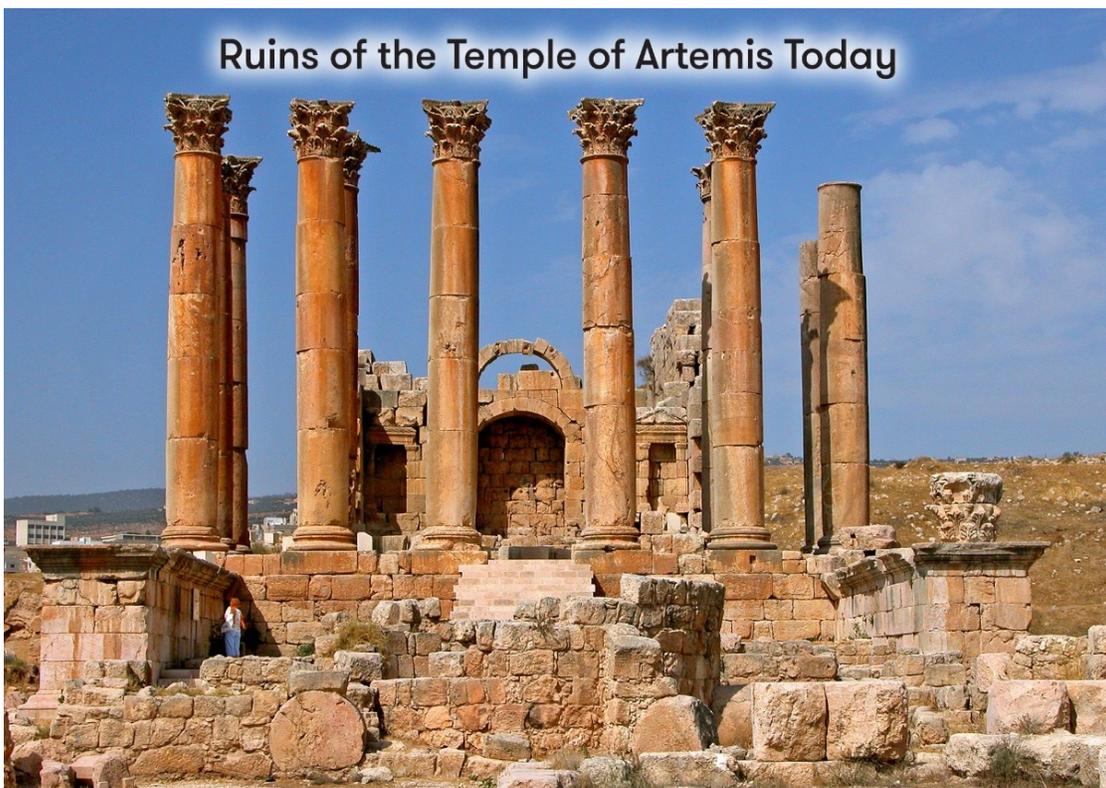


[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

EPHESUS



[https://upload.wikimedia.org/wikipedia/commons/6/6c/Temple of Diana at Ephesus by Fedinand Knab %281886%29.png](https://upload.wikimedia.org/wikipedia/commons/6/6c/Temple_of_Diana_at_Ephesus_by_Fedinand_Knab_%281886%29.png)

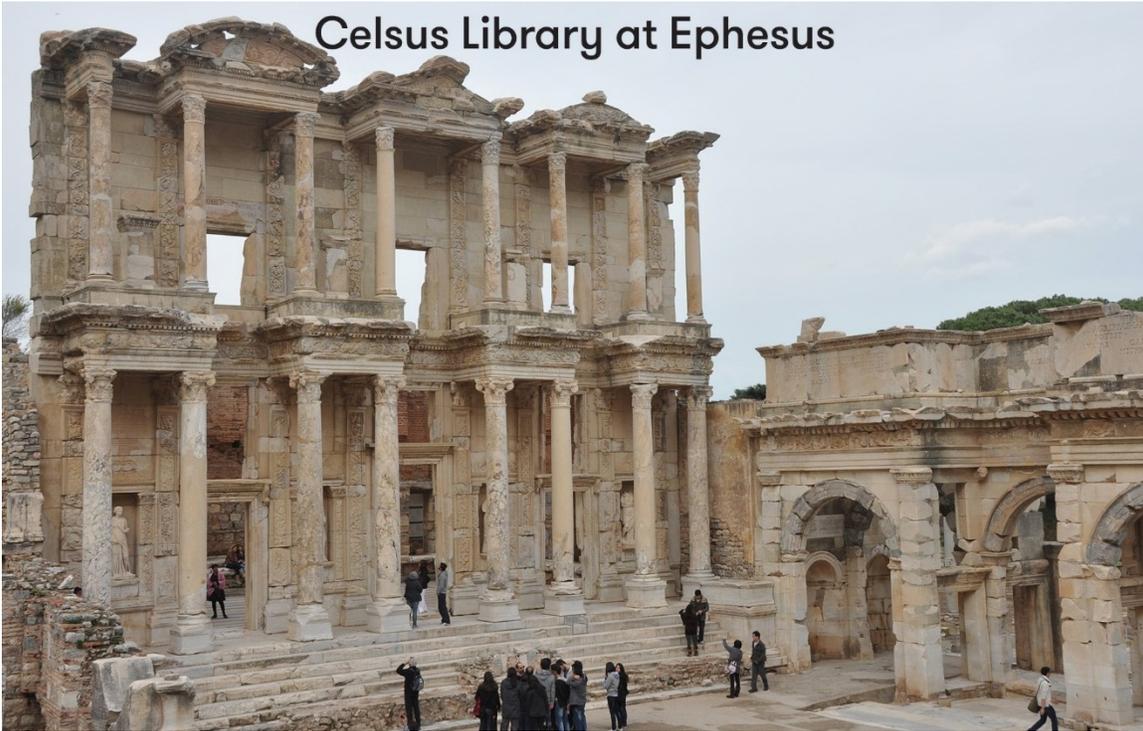


[https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Jordan-16A-085 - Temple of Artemis.jpg](https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Jordan-16A-085_-_Temple_of_Artemis.jpg)

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

EPHESUS

Celsus Library at Ephesus



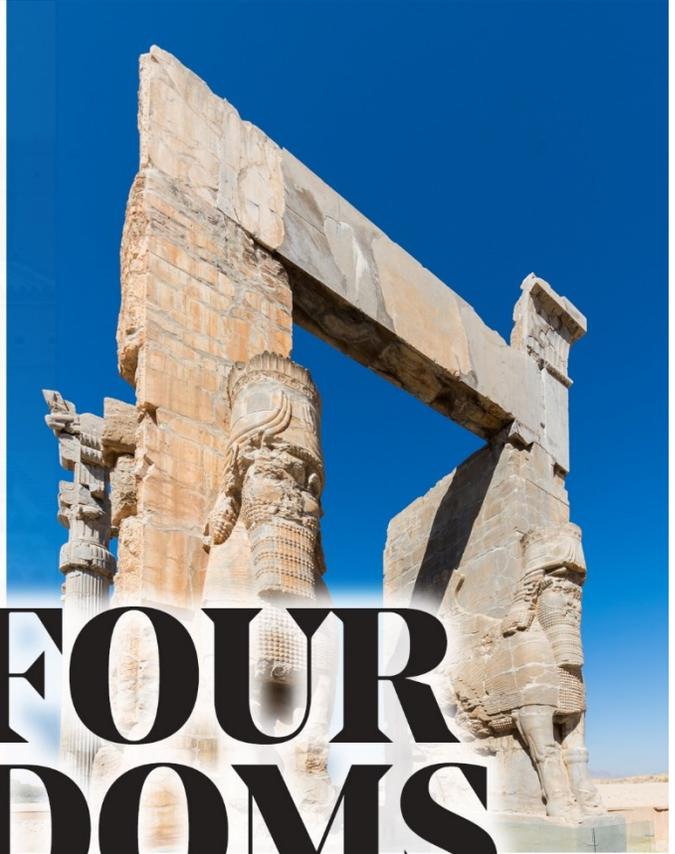
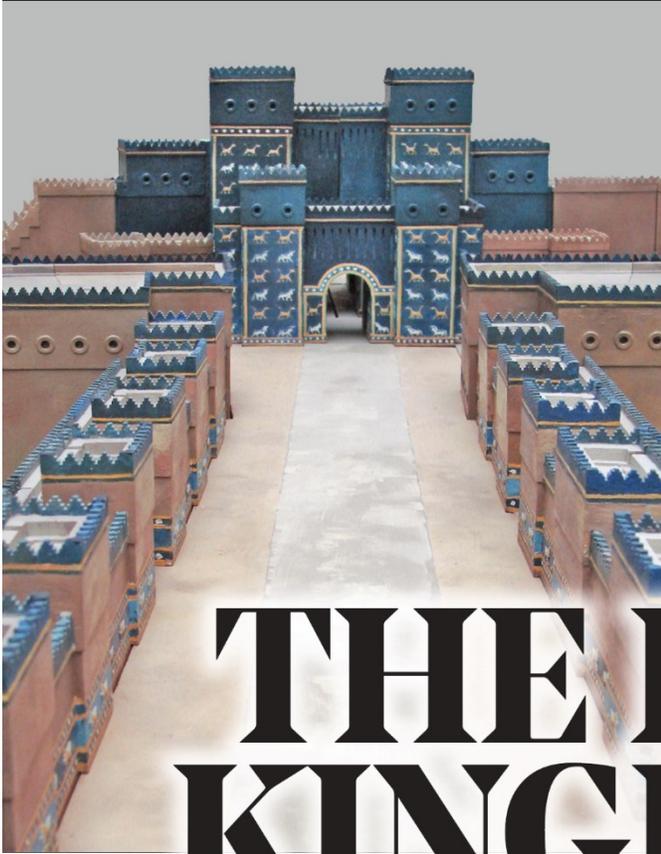
<https://pixabay.com/photos/ephesus-ephesus-library-2669056/>

The Greek Theatre at Ephesus



<https://pixabay.com/photos/ephesus-turkey-greek-theatre-95558/>

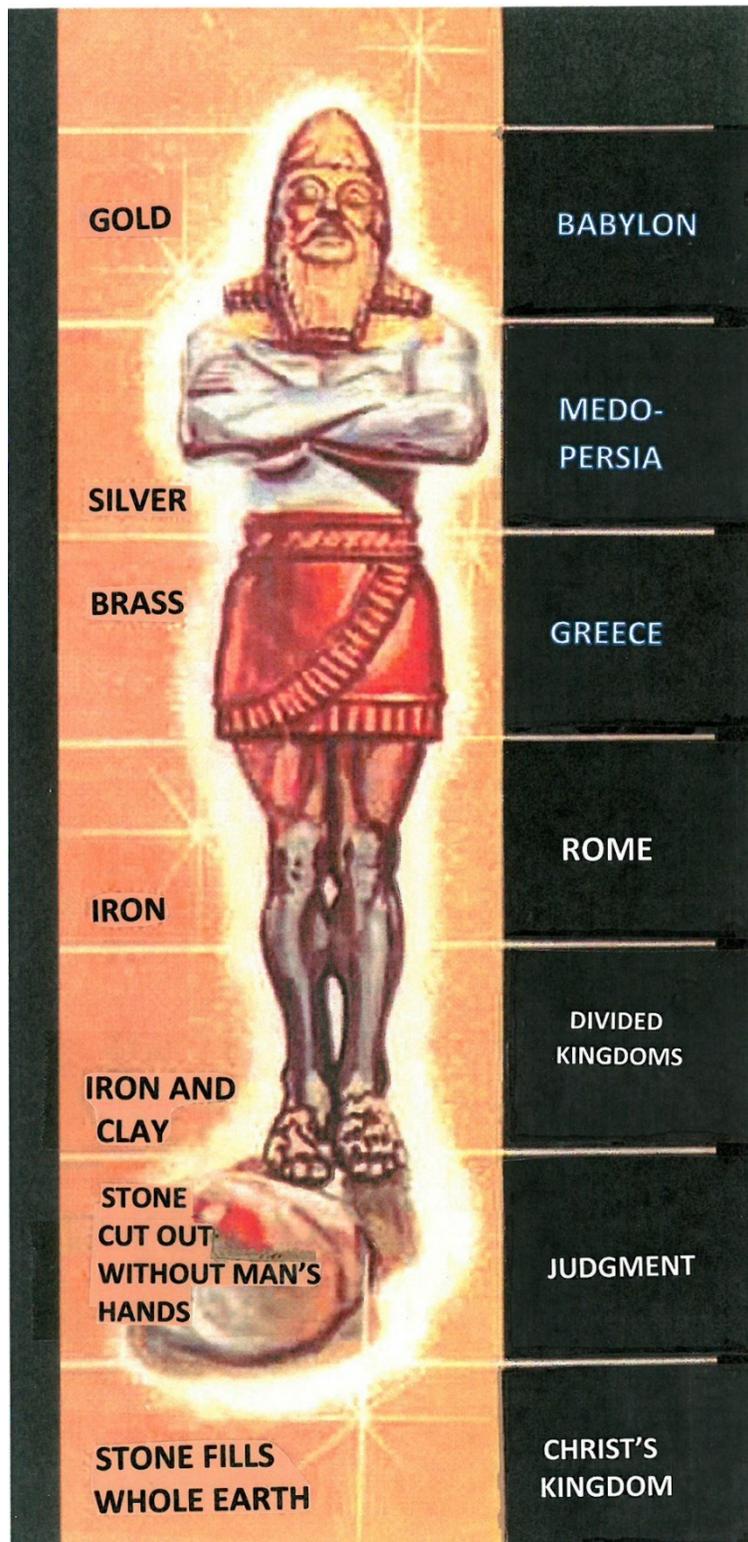
[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)



THE FOUR KINGDOMS

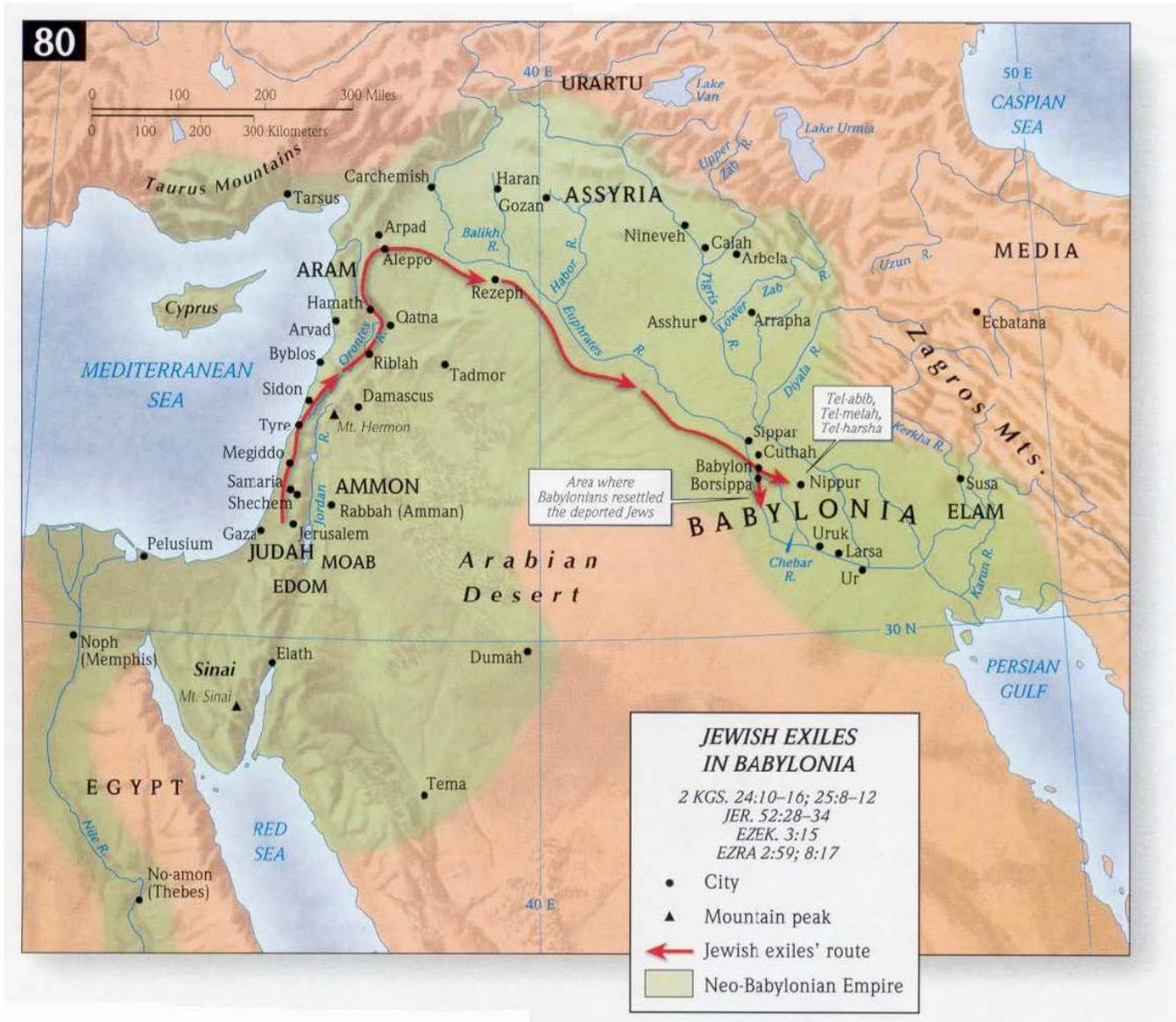


IMAGE OF NEBUCHADNEZZAR'S DREAM



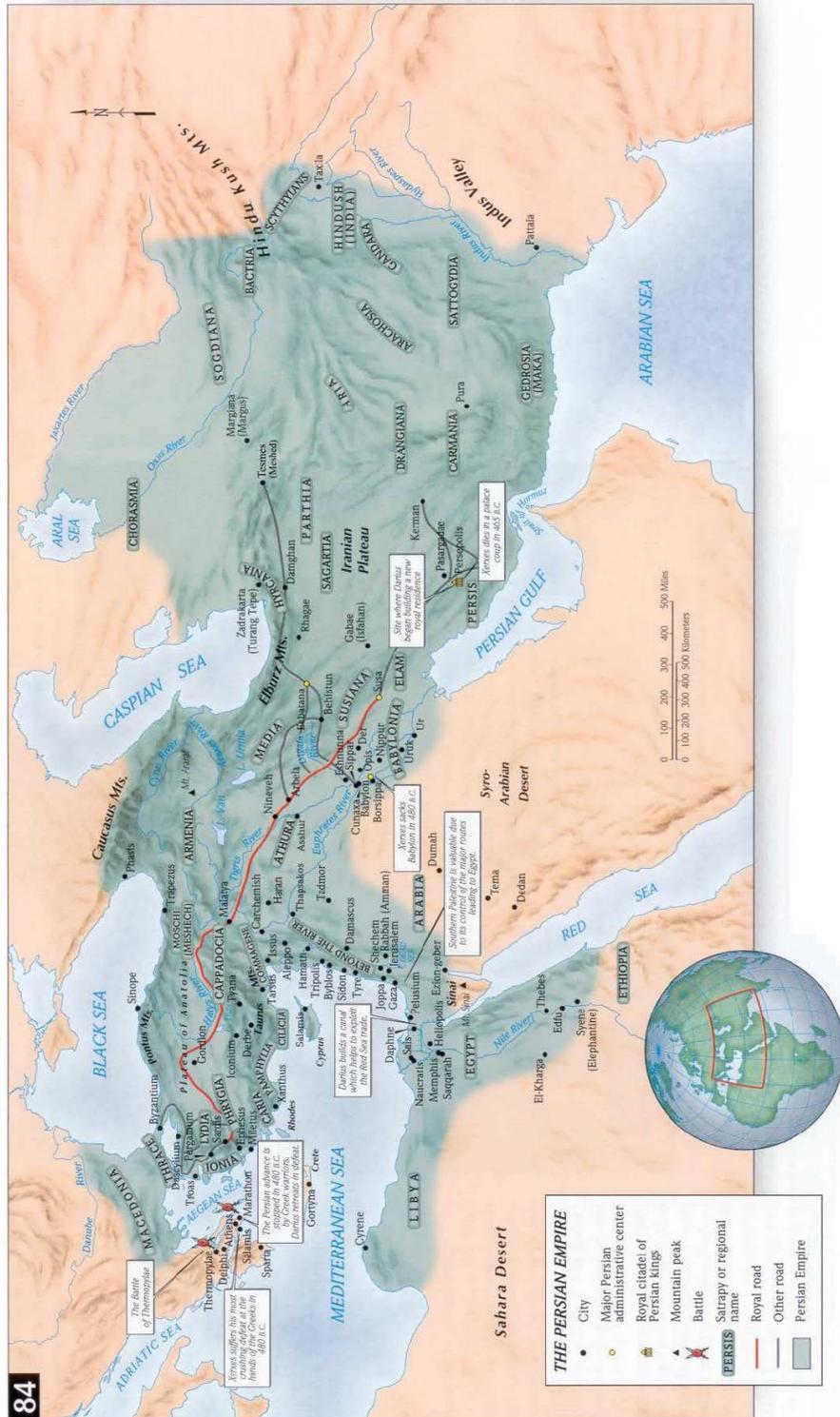
[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

BABYLONIAN EMPIRE



[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

THE PERSIAN EMPIRE

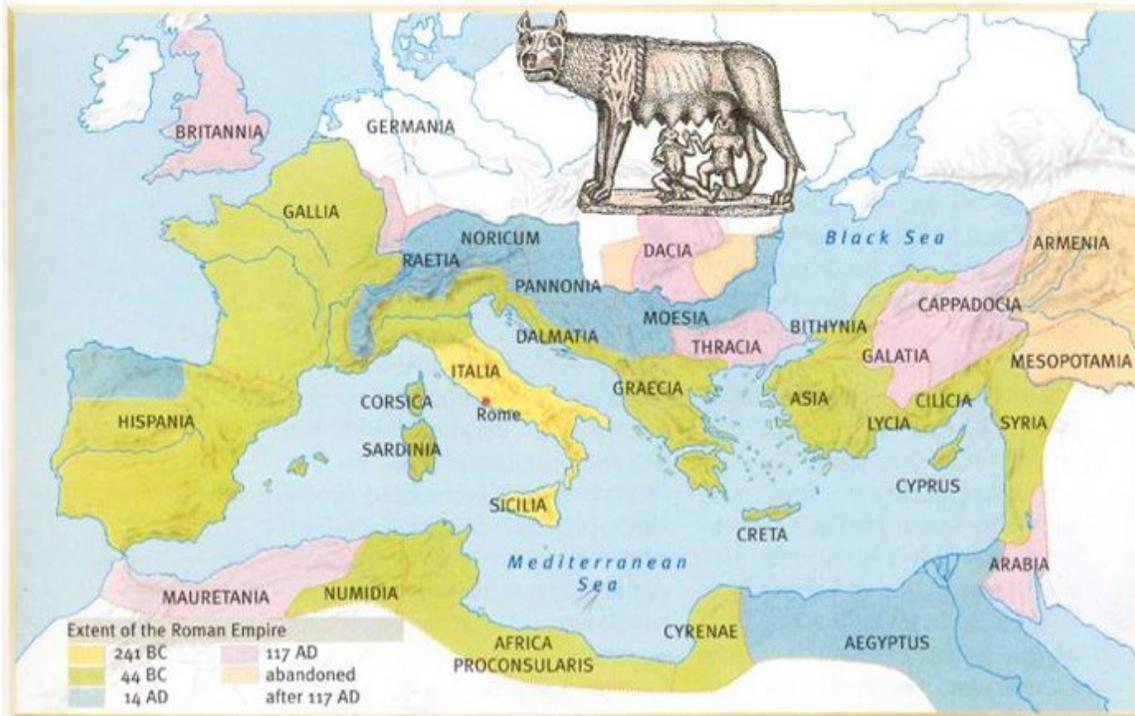


[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

ALEXANDER THE GREAT'S GREEK EMPIRE



EXTENT OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE



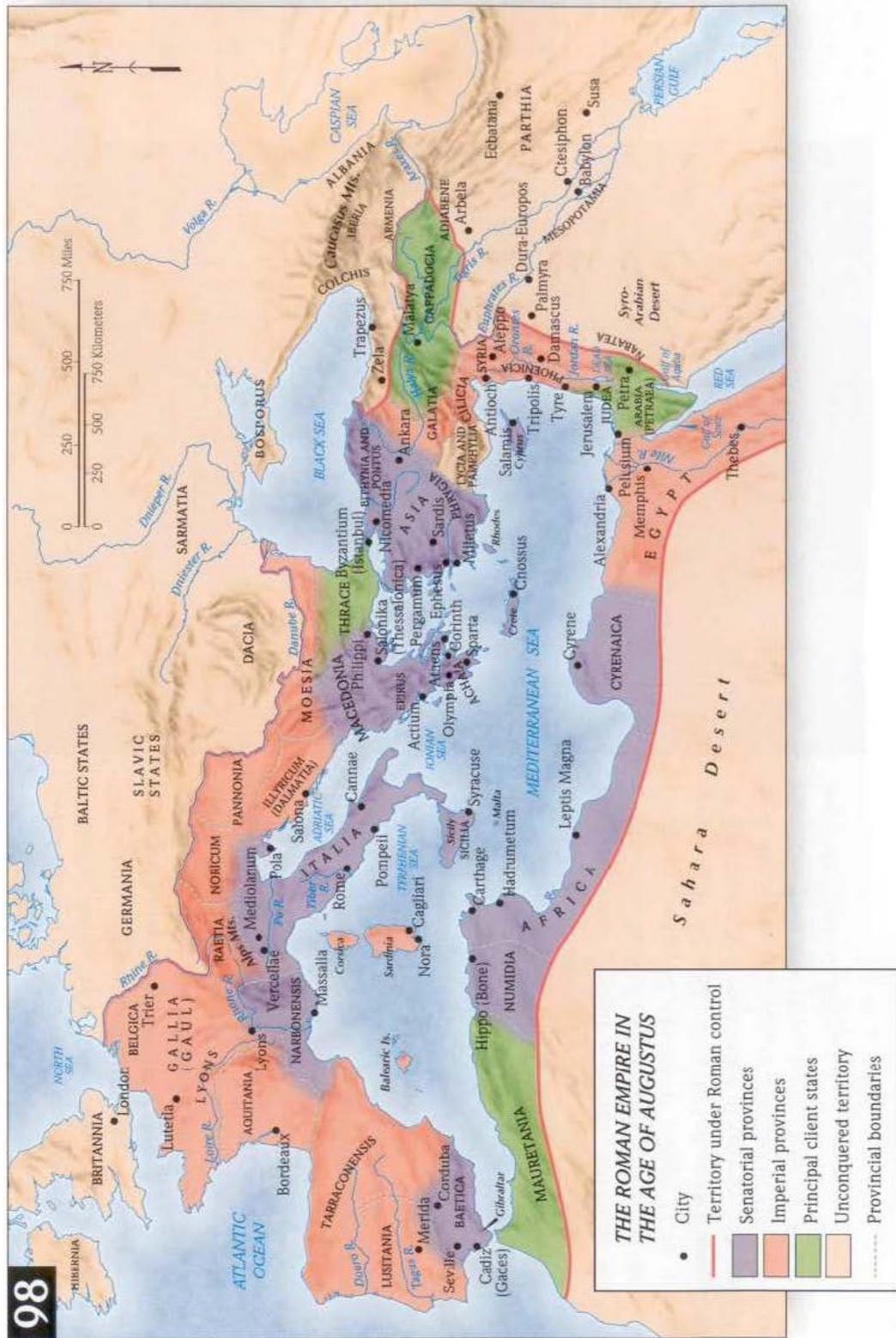
Ancient Rome by Dr. Ernst Kunzli; Illustrated by Peter Klaucke; Tessloff Publishing; Copyright 1998.

In the 2nd Century A.D., the Roman Empire stretched from Scotland to Sudan and from the Caucasians to the Strait of Gibraltar.

At the top of the map is the Capitoline she-wolf, the symbol of Rome.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

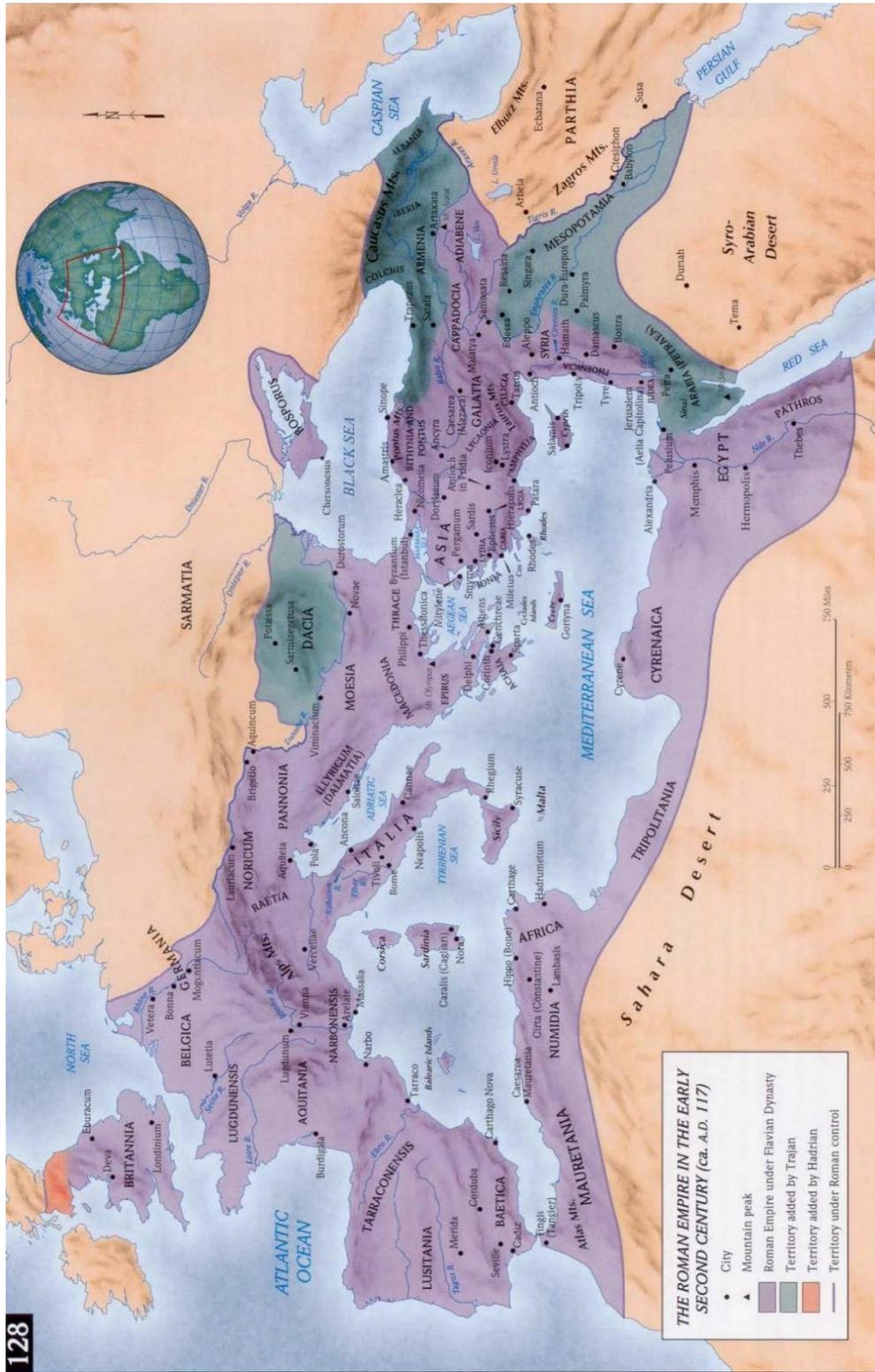
ROMAN EMPIRE: AGE OF AUGUSTUS



98

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

ROMAN EMPIRE: EARLY 2ND CENTURY



128

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

THE TRIUMPHAL PROCESSION



Apotheosis (becoming a god) of Emperor Antoninus Pius (138-161) and his wife Faustina from a large relief in Rome.

The triumph — today we would say “triumphal procession” — was the high point in the career of any Roman commander.

What was the “triumph”?

The triumph was a celebration in honor of Jupiter, but also a festival that promised good fortune for the entire state. The victorious commander, the triumphator, marched from the Field of Mars up to the Capitoline Hill—a triumphal route more than two miles long. Here the spoils of war were displayed and prisoners were executed. The celebration ended at the Capitol—the citadel on the Capitoline Hill. Here they made sacrifices to Jupiter.

From the year 71 AD on, imperial Rome reserved the triumphal procession for emperors alone, and the emperors

increasingly wore the symbols of a triumphator—purple toga, golden wreath, and eagle scepter—as their normal attire. The emperor now saw himself as an eternal triumphator.

Despite set backs and defeats, the Roman Empire endured and senatorial rule never

What did “pax Romana” mean?

returned. Even before the reign of Augustus the Roman republic had never been a democracy in the

modern sense, but rather a state led by the nobility.

Rome saw it as its task in the world to preserve peace, justice and order among the peoples under its rule. This wasn’t an easy task, since the empire included many, many different peoples — from Britons to Egyptians, from Iberians to Syrians. By enforcing this Roman peace – pax Romana – Rome meant to provide the necessary basis for a prosperous empire.

Augustus brought peace and prosperity to his empire and established the policy of pax Romana. This policy interrupted the endless wars that again and again spread ruin throughout the known world. This “Augustan” peace outlived the emperor and in time was seen as the essence of imperial

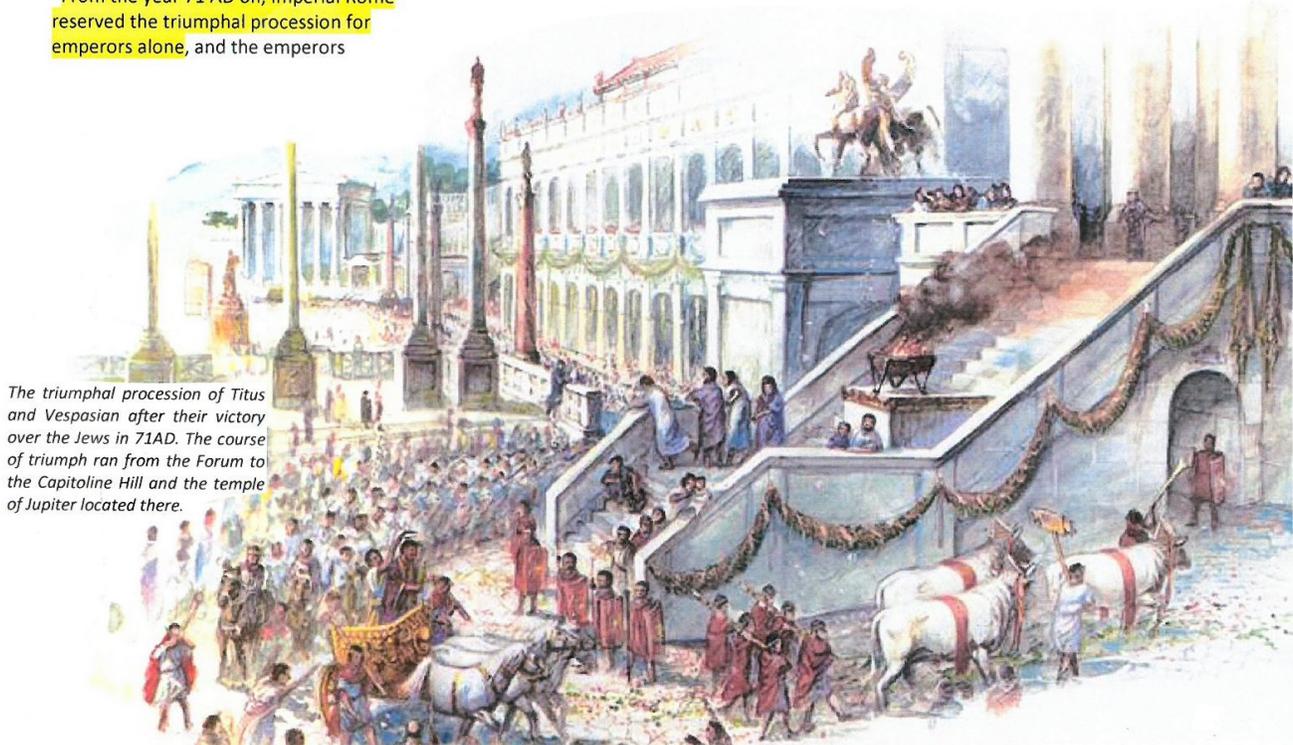
rule.

Failures were unable to diminish the fascination that emanated from the Roman Empire. Rome remained the ideal for rulers in Europe and elsewhere: German emperors in the Middle Ages, Emperor Napoleon, the Fascist dictator Mussolini, and Russia’s Tsars. The United States constitution has features reminiscent of the Roman principate — for example, the strong position granted to the president.

THE OVATIO, which gave us the word “ovation,” was a kind of substitute for the triumphal procession. Like the triumph, the *ovatio* had to be approved by the senate. It was more modest than the triumph, however. The commander entered the city on foot, the wreaths were of myrtle and not of laurel, and the celebration was not so grand.

MARCELLUS, victor over Syracuse in 212 BC, insisted that Rome grant him only the ovatio. He thus showed himself in a decidedly modest light. Later, however, he celebrated a triumph on the Alban Mount.

GENERALS for whom the senate did not approve a triumph could still celebrate one at their own expense. They staged a procession to the temple of Jupiter Latiaris on the Alban Mount southwest of Rome. This kind of triumph was still considered authentic and appeared in the lists of triumphators.



The triumphal procession of Titus and Vespasian after their victory over the Jews in 71AD. The course of triumph ran from the Forum to the Capitoline Hill and the temple of Jupiter located there.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

TRIUMPHAL PROCESSION

Titus/Vespasian Victory over the Jews A.D. 71

What Was the Triumph?

The Triumph—today we would say “triumphal procession”—was the high point in the career of any Roman commander. The triumph was a celebration in honor of Jupiter, but also a festival that promised good fortune for the entire state. The victorious commander, the triumphator, marched from the Field of Mars up to the Capitoline Hill—a triumphal route more than two miles long. Here the spoils of war were displayed, and prisoners were executed. The celebration ended at the Capitol—the citadel on the Capitoline Hill. Here they made sacrifices to Jupiter.

Text from Artist Depiction

The triumphal procession of Titus and Vespasian after their victory over the Jews in 71 A.D. The course of Triumph ran from the Forum to the Captoline Hill and the temple of Jupiter located there.

Colossians 2:12–15 KJV

Col. 2:12 Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with *him* through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

Col. 2:13 ¶ And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses;

Col. 2:14 Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross;

Col. 2:15 *And* having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it.

Colossians 2:15 AMPC [God] disarmed the principalities and powers that were ranged against us and made a bold display *and* public example of them, in triumphing over them in Him *and* in it [the cross].

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

JOSEPHUS

Witness to the Roman Siege and Destruction of Jerusalem and the Second Temple

Luke 21:20–24 ASV

²⁰ But when ye see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that her desolation is at hand.

²¹ Then let them that are in Judaea flee unto the mountains; and let them that are in the midst of her depart out; and let not them that are in the country enter therein.

²² For these are days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.

²³ Woe unto them that are with child and to them that give suck in those days! for there shall be great distress upon the land, and wrath unto this people.

²⁴ And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led captive into all the nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

Josephus, the Jewish historian, witnessed this destruction and records details of the horror. Especially poignant is the account of a nursing mother that exactly fits what Jesus said in Luke 21:23. (See *Wars of the Jews*, Book VI, Chapter III.) She did exactly opposite of Jesus' instructions. She left her village home and fled to the Temple area. The results are too terrible to describe here. Josephus' description exactly verifies what Jesus' warnings of the destruction of the Second Temple were exact.

One thing that I would share here: Josephus records that many supernatural signs of the impending destruction were given by God. Some were in the heavens. Here is what Josephus said concerning our sign-giving God:

Josephus, *Wars of the Jews*, Book VI, Chapter III

Now, if any one consider these things, he will find that God takes care of mankind, and by all ways possible foreshews to our race what is for their preservation; but that men perish by those miseries which they madly and voluntarily bring upon themselves

In Luke 21:24, Jesus said that the captives would be led away into all nations. That happened. The Jewish survivors and their seed were scattered to the four corners of the world. From this scattering there will be an ingathering (Deuteronomy 30:1–9).

Jesus focused on Jerusalem. It is only here that the words “trodden down” are used.

In verse 24, Jesus moves forward in time from A.D. 70 to the end of days when the times of the Gentile nations treading Jerusalem would be fulfilled.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

GLOSSARY

PAROUSIA

Matthew 24:3 ESV As he sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to him privately, saying, “Tell us, when will these things be, and what will be the sign of your **coming** and of the end of the age?”

Companion Bible on Matthew 24:3 (Bullinger Notes)

coming – presence. Gr. *parousia*. This is the first of 24 occurrences of this important word (Matt 24:3, 27, 37, 39. 1 Cor. 7:6; 10:10. Phil. 1:26; 2:12. 1 Thess 2:19; 3:13; 4:15; 5:23. 2 Thess 2:1, 8, 9. James 5:7, 8. 2 Peter 1:16; 3:4, 12. 1 John 2:28.)

The Papyri show that “from the Ptolemaic period down to the second century A.D. the word traced in the East as a technical expression for the arrival or the visit of the king or the emperor”, also of other persons in authority, or of troops. (See *Deissmann’s *Light, &etc.*, pp. 372–8, 441–5). It is therefore not a N.T. word, as some have supposed.

**Light from the Ancient East: The New Testament; Illustrated by Recently Discovered Texts of the Graeco-Roman World (Classic Reprint)*

by Gustav Adolf Deissmann

This invaluable study of non-literary Greek and Latin texts from the period leading up to and contemporary with the rise and early development of Christianity is once again available after being out of print for nearly a decade. Available in [hardcover](#) and [paperback](#). The 1910 English translation is available a free [PDF download](#) at [archive.org](#).

What is papyrus?—Ancient Egypt

From Qatr.us from Professor Carr.

To see the article online: <https://quatr.us/egypt/papyrus-ancient-egypt.htm>

When the **Egyptians** began to write, about **3000 B.C.**, they wrote from the beginning in ink, on papyrus (pah-PIE-russ). Papyrus is a plant that grows wild all over the **Nile river valley**, so it is very common in **Egypt**. You can cut the long papyrus stalks and soak them in **water** until they rot a little, and then you lay a lot of these stalks next to each other, and a lot of other stalks on top, crossways to the first ones, and then you pound them flat, until all the stalks get mashed into all the other ones, and you have something a lot like **paper**.

At first papyrus was only used in **Egypt**, but by about **1000 B.C.** people all over **West Asia** began buying papyrus from Egypt and using it, since it was much more convenient than **clay tablets** (less breakable, and not as heavy!). People made papyrus in small sheets and then glued the sheets together to make big pieces.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

APPENDIXES
to
THE
COMPANION
BIBLE

THE COMPANION BIBLE—GENESIS 1

THE ° FIRST ° BOOK OF ° MOSES,
CALLED
° GENESIS.

A1 A
(p. 1)

1 IN the beginning ° God ° created ° the heaven and the earth.

B

2 ° And ° the earth ° was ° without form, and void; and darkness ° was upon the ° face of the deep.

A a
(p. 3)
4004

And ° the Spirit of God moved upon the ° face of the waters.

3 And ° God ° said, "Let there ° be light:" and there ° was light.

4 And ° God ° saw the light, that *it was* ° good; and ° God ° divided the light from the darkness.

5 And ° God ° called the light Day, and the darkness He ° called Night. And the ° evening and the morning were the ° first ° day.

b

6 And ° God ° said, "Let there be a ° firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters."

7 And ° God ° made the ° firmament, and ° divided the waters which *were* under the firmament from the waters which *were* above the firmament: and it was so.

8 And ° God ° called the ° firmament ° Heaven. And the ° evening and the morning were the second ° day.

First Book. For its relation to the other books of the Pentateuch as well as to the Hebrew Canon of O.T., see Ap. 1. Book. See Ap. 47.

Moses. Ascribed to him, Mark 10. 2-8, &c.; see Ap. 2. Genesis. No part of Hebrew Title, which is simply *Bereshith*, "in [the] beginning", because the book of all beginnings. Genesis is Greek=generation, creation. For its being complementary to the Apocalypse, see Ap. 3.

1 "THE WORLD THAT THEN WAS" (2 Pet. 3. 5, 6). See Structure, p. 1. Creation in eternity past, to which all Fossils and "Remains" belong.

God. Heb. *Elohim*, pl. First occurrence connects it with creation, and denotes, by usage, the Creator in relation to His creatures. See Ap. 4. The Heb. accent *Athnach* places the emphasis, and gives pause, on "God" as being Himself the great worker, separating the Worker from His work.

created (sing.). Occurs 6 times in this Introduction. Other acts 46 times. See Ap. 5. Perfection implied. Deut. 32. 4. 2 Sam. 22. 31. Job 38. 7. Ps. 111; 147. 3-5. Prov. 3. 19. Ecc. 3. 11-14. [Even the Greek *Cosmos* = ornament. Ex. 33. 4-6. Isa. 49. 18. Jer. 4. 30. Eze. 7. 20. 1 Pet. 3. 3.]

the heaven and the earth. With Heb. Particle *'eth* before each, emphasising the Article "the", and thus distinguishing both from 2. 1. "Heavens" in Heb. always in pl. See note on Deut. 4. 26.

2-And. Note the Fig. *Polysyndeton* (Ap. 6), by which, in the 34 verses of this Introduction, each one of 102 separate acts are emphasised; and the important word "God" in v. 1 is carried like a lamp through the whole of this Introduction (1. 1-2. 3).

was = became. See Gen. 2. 7; 4. 3; 9. 15; 19. 26. Ex. 32. 1. Deut. 27. 9. 2 Sam. 7. 24, &c. Also rendered *came to pass*, Gen. 4. 14; 22. 1; 23. 1; 27. 1. Josh. 4. 1; 5. 1. 1 Kings 18. 32. Isa. 14. 24, &c. Also rendered *be* (in the sense of *become*), v. 3, &c., and where the verb "to be" is not in italic type. Hence, Ex. 3. 1, kept = became keeper, quit = become men, &c. See Ap. 7.

without form = waste. Heb. *tohū vā bohū*. Fig. *Paronomasia*. Ap. 6. Not created *tohū* (Isa. 45. 18), but became *tohū* (Gen. 1. 2. 2 Pet. 3. 5, 6). "An enemy hath done this" (Matt. 13. 25, 28, 39. Cp. 1 Cor. 14. 33). See Ap. 8. was. This is in italic type, because no verb "to be" in Heb. (see Ap. 7). In like manner man became a ruin (Gen. 3. Ps. 14. 1-3; 51. 5; 53. 1-3. Ecc. 7. 20. Rom. 7. 18). face. Fig. *Pleonasm*. Ap. 6.

1. -2-31 (A, p. 1). "THE HEAVENS AND EARTH WHICH ARE NOW" (*Extended Alternation*).

A	a		-2-5. Darkness and Light.	Night and Day	1st Day.
	b		6-8. Waters.	Division between them.	2nd Day.
	c		9-13. Earth.	Fruit from it.	3rd Day.
	a		14-19. Day and Night.	Sun and Moon.	4th Day.
	b		20-23. Waters.	Life from them.	5th Day.
	c		24-31. Earth.	Life from it.	6th Day.

-2 the Spirit of God moved (see Ap. 9) = The beginning of "the heavens and earth which are now" (2 Pet. 3. 7). It is even so in the New Creation. The Spirit moves (John 3. 3-8. Rom. 8. 5, 9, 14. Gal. 4. 29. 2 Cor. 5. 17, 18).

3 God said (occurs 10 times in Introduction). This begins each day: 3rd day twice; 6th day four times. The second act is also of God (1 Pet. 1. 23-25). Ap. 5. be light = become light (as in v. 2), not the verb "to be". Light not located till 4th day. was = became, as in v. 2. It is even so in the New Creation: His Word enters and gives light (Ps. 119. 130. 2 Cor. 4. 6). 4 saw. Occurs 7 times in Introduction. Ap. 5. good = beautiful (Ecc. 3. 11). divided. Occurs twice. Ap. 5. Each day's work called "good", except the 2nd, because nothing created on that day: only division made.

5 called. Occurs 5 times. Ap. 5. evening . . . morning. Fig. *Synecdoche* (of the Part), Ap. 6. Put for a full day. The beginning and end of anything is put for the whole of it. Cp. Ecc. 3. 11; 10. 13; 11. 6. Ps. 92. 2. Isa. 41. 4; 44. 6; 48. 12. Rev. 1. 8, 11, 17; 2. 8; 21. 6; 22. 13. first. For spiritual significance see Ap. 10. first day = day one. The word "day" may refer to a prolonged period when used without any qualifying words. But when qualified with a numeral (cardinal or ordinal) it is defined and limited by it to a day of 24 hours. It is further limited here by its boundaries "evening and morning", as well as by the 7th day. Cp. Ex. 20. 9, 11. See Ap. 11. 6 firmament = expanse. Something spread out.

7 made. Occurs 7 times. Ap. 5. 8 Heaven = Heb. high, lofty.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

2. 21.	II. PETER.	3. 9.
<p>21 For it had been better for them °not to have °known the way of °righteousness, than, after they have °known it, to °turn °from the holy commandment °delivered °unto them. 22 But °it is happened °unto them °according to the °true °proverb, "The dog is °turned °to his own °vomit °again"; and the °sow that was °washed °to her °wallowing in the °mire.</p>	<p>21 not. Ap. 105. II. known. Ap. 132. I. iii. turn=turn back. from. Ap. 104. vii. unto=to. 22 it is = there hath. according to = the (fulfilment) of. true. Ap. 175. 1. proverb. Gr. <i>paroiimia</i>. See John 10. 6. turned = turned back. to. Ap. 104. ix. 3. vomit. Gr. <i>exerama</i>. Only here. again. Omit. Quoted from Prov. 26. 11. sow. Gr. <i>hus</i>. Only here. washed. Ap. 136. iii. to. Ap. 104. vi. wallowing. Gr. <i>kulisma</i>. Only here. Cp. Mark 9. 20. mire. Gr. <i>borboros</i>. Only here.</p>	<p>3. 1. second. This shows that the epistle is addressed to the same readers as is the first. beloved. Ap. 135. III. unto=to. in. Ap. 104. viii. which. Pl. Hence the insertion of <i>both</i>. stir up. Ap. 178. I. 5. See 1. 13. pure. See Phil. 1. 10 (sincere). minds = mind. by way of = in, as above. remembrance. See 1. 13. 2 That ye may = To. be mindful. See 2 Tim. 1. 4. words. Gr. <i>rhēma</i>. See Mark 9. 32. by. Ap. 104. xviii. 1. prophets. Ap. 169. us the. The texts read "your". apostles. Ap. 169. Lord. Ap. 98. VI. i. β. 2. A.</p>
<p>C A 3 This °second epistle, °beloved, I now write °unto you; °in both °which I °stir up your °pure °minds °by way of °remembrance;</p>	<p>3. 1. second. This shows that the epistle is addressed to the same readers as is the first. beloved. Ap. 135. III. unto=to. in. Ap. 104. viii. which. Pl. Hence the insertion of <i>both</i>. stir up. Ap. 178. I. 5. See 1. 13. pure. See Phil. 1. 10 (sincere). minds = mind. by way of = in, as above. remembrance. See 1. 13.</p>	<p>2 That ye may = To. be mindful. See 2 Tim. 1. 4. words. Gr. <i>rhēma</i>. See Mark 9. 32. by. Ap. 104. xviii. 1. prophets. Ap. 169. us the. The texts read "your". apostles. Ap. 169. Lord. Ap. 98. VI. i. β. 2. A.</p>
<p>B 2 °That ye may °be mindful of the °words which were spoken before °by the holy °prophets, and of the commandment of °us the °apostles of the °Lord and Saviour:</p>	<p>2 That ye may = To.</p>	<p>be mindful. See 2 Tim. 1. 4. words. Gr. <i>rhēma</i>. See Mark 9. 32. by. Ap. 104. xviii. 1. prophets. Ap. 169. us the. The texts read "your". apostles. Ap. 169. Lord. Ap. 98. VI. i. β. 2. A.</p>
<p>C N 3 °Knowing this first, that there shall come °in the °last days °scoffers, °walking °after their own lusts,</p>	<p>3 Knowing. Ap. 132. I. ii.</p>	<p>in. Ap. 104. ix. 1. last days. See Acts 2. 17. 2 Tim. 3. 1. scoffers = mockers. Gr. <i>empaiktēs</i>. Only here and Jude 18. walking. All the texts add after walking, "in (Ap. 104. viii) mockery". Gr. <i>empaigmonē</i>. Only here. Cp. Heb. 11. 36.</p>
<p>O 4 And saying, "Where is the promise of His °coming?"</p>	<p>4 coming. See Matt. 24. 3.</p>	<p>since = from (Ap. 104. iv) the (day). fell asleep. Ap. 171. 2. continue. Gr. <i>diamenō</i>. See Gal. 2. 5. from. Ap. 104. iv.</p>
<p>O for °since the fathers °fell asleep, all things °continue as they were °from the beginning of the creation."</p>	<p>since = from (Ap. 104. iv) the (day).</p>	<p>fell asleep. Ap. 171. 2. continue. Gr. <i>diamenō</i>. See Gal. 2. 5. from. Ap. 104. iv.</p>
<p>P 1 5 For °this they willingly are ignorant of, in that by the °word of °God the °heavens were °of old, and the °earth °standing °out of °the water and °in °the water:</p>	<p>5 this, &c. Lit. this is hid from (Gr. <i>lanthanō</i>. See Acts 26. 26) them willing (Ap. 102. 1) it. word. Ap. 121. 10. God. Ap. 98. I. i. 1. heavens. Pl. See Matt. 6. 9, 10. of old. Gr. <i>ekpalai</i>. See 2. 3. earth. Ap. 129. 4. standing = consisting. Gr. <i>sunistēmi</i>. See Col. 1. 17. out of = of. Ap. 104. vii. the. Omit. in = through. Ap. 104. v. 1. The reference is to Pss. 24. 2; 136. 5, 6. Cp. Gen. 1. 6, 7. 6 Whereby = By (Ap. 104. v. 1) which (means). the world, &c. Lit. the then world (Ap. 129. 1). overflowed. Gr. <i>katakluzō</i>. Only here. Cp. 2. 5. perished. See John 17. 12. 7 kept in store = treasured up. unto = for. against = unto. Ap. 104. vi. the = a. judgment. Ap. 177. 7. perdition. See John 17. 12. ungodly. See 1 Pet. 4. 18. men. Ap. 123. 1. 8 be not, &c. Lit. let not this one thing be hidden (as v. 5) from you. not. Ap. 105. II. with. Ap. 104. xii. 2. LORD. Ap. 98. VI. i. β. 1. B. b. 9 is not slack = does not delay. See 1 Tim. 3. 15. not. Ap. 105. I. concerning. Ap. 17. 5. some men. Ap. 124. 4. count = reckon. Same word "account", v. 16. slackness. Gr. <i>bradutēs</i>. Only here. to us-ward = toward (Ap. 104. vi) us, but the texts read "you" willing. Ap. 102. 8. any. Ap. 123. 8. to. Ap. 104. vi. repentance. Ap. 111. II.</p>	<p>3. 3-13 (C, p. 1868). THE WICKED. (Extended Alternation.)</p>
<p>6 °Whereby °the world that then was, being °overflowed with water, °perished:</p>	<p>6 Whereby = By (Ap. 104. v. 1) which (means). the world, &c. Lit. the then world (Ap. 129. 1). overflowed. Gr. <i>katakluzō</i>. Only here. Cp. 2. 5. perished. See John 17. 12.</p>	<p>7 kept in store = treasured up. unto = for. against = unto. Ap. 104. vi. the = a. judgment. Ap. 177. 7. perdition. See John 17. 12. ungodly. See 1 Pet. 4. 18. men. Ap. 123. 1. 8 be not, &c. Lit. let not this one thing be hidden (as v. 5) from you. not. Ap. 105. II. with. Ap. 104. xii. 2. LORD. Ap. 98. VI. i. β. 1. B. b. 9 is not slack = does not delay. See 1 Tim. 3. 15. not. Ap. 105. I. concerning. Ap. 17. 5. some men. Ap. 124. 4. count = reckon. Same word "account", v. 16. slackness. Gr. <i>bradutēs</i>. Only here. to us-ward = toward (Ap. 104. vi) us, but the texts read "you" willing. Ap. 102. 8. any. Ap. 123. 8. to. Ap. 104. vi. repentance. Ap. 111. II.</p>
<p>7 But the °heavens and the °earth which are now, by the same °word are °kept in store, reserved °unto fire °against °the day of °judgment and °perdition of °ungodly °men.</p>	<p>7 kept in store = treasured up. unto = for. against = unto. Ap. 104. vi. the = a. judgment. Ap. 177. 7. perdition. See John 17. 12. ungodly. See 1 Pet. 4. 18. men. Ap. 123. 1. 8 be not, &c. Lit. let not this one thing be hidden (as v. 5) from you. not. Ap. 105. II. with. Ap. 104. xii. 2. LORD. Ap. 98. VI. i. β. 1. B. b. 9 is not slack = does not delay. See 1 Tim. 3. 15. not. Ap. 105. I. concerning. Ap. 17. 5. some men. Ap. 124. 4. count = reckon. Same word "account", v. 16. slackness. Gr. <i>bradutēs</i>. Only here. to us-ward = toward (Ap. 104. vi) us, but the texts read "you" willing. Ap. 102. 8. any. Ap. 123. 8. to. Ap. 104. vi. repentance. Ap. 111. II.</p>	<p>3. 3-13 (C, p. 1868). THE WICKED. (Extended Alternation.)</p>
<p>8 But, °beloved, °be °not ignorant of this one thing,</p>	<p>8 But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing,</p>	<p>C N 3, 4-. The Coming. Scoffed at.</p>
<p>m that one day °is °with the °LORD as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.</p>	<p>O -4. Reason.</p>	<p>P 5-s. Day of judgment.</p>
<p>N 9 The °LORD °is °not slack °concerning His promise, as °some men °count °slackness;</p>	<p>N 9-. The Coming. Delayed.</p>	<p>O -9. Reason.</p>
<p>O but is longsuffering °to us-ward, °not °willing that °any should °perish, but that all should come °to °repentance.</p>	<p>P 10-13. Day of the Lord.</p>	<p>3 Knowing. Ap. 132. I. ii.</p>
<p>after. Ap. 104. x. 2. 4 coming. See Matt. 24. 3. since = from (Ap. 104. iv) the (day). fell asleep. Ap. 171. 2. continue. Gr. <i>diamenō</i>. See Gal. 2. 5. from. Ap. 104. iv.</p>	<p>3 Knowing. Ap. 132. I. ii.</p>	<p>in. Ap. 104. ix. 1.</p>
<p>3. 5-8 (P, above). DAY OF JUDGMENT. (Alternation.)</p>	<p>in. Ap. 104. ix. 1.</p>	<p>last days. See Acts 2. 17. 2 Tim. 3. 1.</p>
<p>P 5- Wilful ignorance.</p>	<p>last days. See Acts 2. 17. 2 Tim. 3. 1.</p>	<p>scoffers = mockers. Gr. <i>empaiktēs</i>. Only here and Jude 18.</p>
<p>m -5-7. Past and future judgment.</p>	<p>scoffers = mockers. Gr. <i>empaiktēs</i>. Only here and Jude 18.</p>	<p>walking. All the texts add after walking, "in (Ap. 104. viii) mockery". Gr. <i>empaigmonē</i>. Only here. Cp. Heb. 11. 36.</p>
<p>l 8-. Warning against ignorance.</p>	<p>walking. All the texts add after walking, "in (Ap. 104. viii) mockery". Gr. <i>empaigmonē</i>. Only here. Cp. Heb. 11. 36.</p>	<p>Cp. Heb. 11. 36.</p>
<p>m -8. Divine periods.</p>	<p>Cp. Heb. 11. 36.</p>	<p>since = from (Ap. 104. iv) the (day). fell asleep. Ap. 171. 2. continue. Gr. <i>diamenō</i>. See Gal. 2. 5. from. Ap. 104. iv.</p>
<p>5 this, &c. Lit. this is hid from (Gr. <i>lanthanō</i>. See Acts 26. 26) them willing (Ap. 102. 1) it. word. Ap. 121. 10. God. Ap. 98. I. i. 1. heavens. Pl. See Matt. 6. 9, 10. of old. Gr. <i>ekpalai</i>. See 2. 3. earth. Ap. 129. 4. standing = consisting. Gr. <i>sunistēmi</i>. See Col. 1. 17. out of = of. Ap. 104. vii. the. Omit. in = through. Ap. 104. v. 1. The reference is to Pss. 24. 2; 136. 5, 6. Cp. Gen. 1. 6, 7. 6 Whereby = By (Ap. 104. v. 1) which (means). the world, &c. Lit. the then world (Ap. 129. 1). overflowed. Gr. <i>katakluzō</i>. Only here. Cp. 2. 5. perished. See John 17. 12. 7 kept in store = treasured up. unto = for. against = unto. Ap. 104. vi. the = a. judgment. Ap. 177. 7. perdition. See John 17. 12. ungodly. See 1 Pet. 4. 18. men. Ap. 123. 1. 8 be not, &c. Lit. let not this one thing be hidden (as v. 5) from you. not. Ap. 105. II. with. Ap. 104. xii. 2. LORD. Ap. 98. VI. i. β. 1. B. b. 9 is not slack = does not delay. See 1 Tim. 3. 15. not. Ap. 105. I. concerning. Ap. 17. 5. some men. Ap. 124. 4. count = reckon. Same word "account", v. 16. slackness. Gr. <i>bradutēs</i>. Only here. to us-ward = toward (Ap. 104. vi) us, but the texts read "you" willing. Ap. 102. 8. any. Ap. 123. 8. to. Ap. 104. vi. repentance. Ap. 111. II.</p>	<p>since = from (Ap. 104. iv) the (day). fell asleep. Ap. 171. 2. continue. Gr. <i>diamenō</i>. See Gal. 2. 5. from. Ap. 104. iv.</p>	<p>3. 3-13 (C, p. 1868). THE WICKED. (Extended Alternation.)</p>
<p>Ap. 121. 10. God. Ap. 98. I. i. 1. heavens. Pl. See Matt. 6. 9, 10. of old. Gr. <i>ekpalai</i>. See 2. 3. earth. Ap. 129. 4. standing = consisting. Gr. <i>sunistēmi</i>. See Col. 1. 17. out of = of. Ap. 104. vii. the. Omit. in = through. Ap. 104. v. 1. The reference is to Pss. 24. 2; 136. 5, 6. Cp. Gen. 1. 6, 7. 6 Whereby = By (Ap. 104. v. 1) which (means). the world, &c. Lit. the then world (Ap. 129. 1). overflowed. Gr. <i>katakluzō</i>. Only here. Cp. 2. 5. perished. See John 17. 12. 7 kept in store = treasured up. unto = for. against = unto. Ap. 104. vi. the = a. judgment. Ap. 177. 7. perdition. See John 17. 12. ungodly. See 1 Pet. 4. 18. men. Ap. 123. 1. 8 be not, &c. Lit. let not this one thing be hidden (as v. 5) from you. not. Ap. 105. II. with. Ap. 104. xii. 2. LORD. Ap. 98. VI. i. β. 1. B. b. 9 is not slack = does not delay. See 1 Tim. 3. 15. not. Ap. 105. I. concerning. Ap. 17. 5. some men. Ap. 124. 4. count = reckon. Same word "account", v. 16. slackness. Gr. <i>bradutēs</i>. Only here. to us-ward = toward (Ap. 104. vi) us, but the texts read "you" willing. Ap. 102. 8. any. Ap. 123. 8. to. Ap. 104. vi. repentance. Ap. 111. II.</p>	<p>3. 3-13 (C, p. 1868). THE WICKED. (Extended Alternation.)</p>	<p>C N 3, 4-. The Coming. Scoffed at.</p>
<p>Ap. 129. 1). overflowed. Gr. <i>katakluzō</i>. Only here. Cp. 2. 5. perished. See John 17. 12. 7 kept in store = treasured up. unto = for. against = unto. Ap. 104. vi. the = a. judgment. Ap. 177. 7. perdition. See John 17. 12. ungodly. See 1 Pet. 4. 18. men. Ap. 123. 1. 8 be not, &c. Lit. let not this one thing be hidden (as v. 5) from you. not. Ap. 105. II. with. Ap. 104. xii. 2. LORD. Ap. 98. VI. i. β. 1. B. b. 9 is not slack = does not delay. See 1 Tim. 3. 15. not. Ap. 105. I. concerning. Ap. 17. 5. some men. Ap. 124. 4. count = reckon. Same word "account", v. 16. slackness. Gr. <i>bradutēs</i>. Only here. to us-ward = toward (Ap. 104. vi) us, but the texts read "you" willing. Ap. 102. 8. any. Ap. 123. 8. to. Ap. 104. vi. repentance. Ap. 111. II.</p>	<p>C N 3, 4-. The Coming. Scoffed at.</p>	<p>O -4. Reason.</p>
<p>Ap. 123. 1. 8 be not, &c. Lit. let not this one thing be hidden (as v. 5) from you. not. Ap. 105. II. with. Ap. 104. xii. 2. LORD. Ap. 98. VI. i. β. 1. B. b. 9 is not slack = does not delay. See 1 Tim. 3. 15. not. Ap. 105. I. concerning. Ap. 17. 5. some men. Ap. 124. 4. count = reckon. Same word "account", v. 16. slackness. Gr. <i>bradutēs</i>. Only here. to us-ward = toward (Ap. 104. vi) us, but the texts read "you" willing. Ap. 102. 8. any. Ap. 123. 8. to. Ap. 104. vi. repentance. Ap. 111. II.</p>	<p>O -4. Reason.</p>	<p>P 5-s. Day of judgment.</p>
<p>Ap. 123. 8. any. Ap. 123. 8. to. Ap. 104. vi. repentance. Ap. 111. II.</p>	<p>P 5-s. Day of judgment.</p>	<p>N 9-. The Coming. Delayed.</p>
<p>Ap. 111. II.</p>	<p>N 9-. The Coming. Delayed.</p>	<p>O -9. Reason.</p>
<p>Ap. 111. II.</p>	<p>O -9. Reason.</p>	<p>P 10-13. Day of the Lord.</p>

THE COMPANION BIBLE—2 PETER 3:1-18

3. 10.	II. PETER.	3. 18.
<p>P n 10 But the day of the ^sLORD will come as a thief ^oin the night;</p> <p>o ¹in the which the ^sheavens shall pass away ^owith a great noise, and the ^oelements shall ^omelt ^owith fervent heat, the ^searth also and the works that are ^otherein shall be ^oburned up.</p> <p>p 11 Seeing then that all these things shall be ^odissolved,</p> <p>q what manner of persons ought ye to ^obe ¹in all holy ^oconversation and ^ogodliness,</p> <p>n 12 ^oLooking for and ^ohasting unto the ⁴coming of the day of ^sGod,</p> <p>o ^owherein the ^sheavens ^obeing on fire shall be ¹¹dissolved, and the ¹⁰elements shall ^omelt ¹⁰with fervent heat?</p> <p>p 13 Nevertheless we, ^oaccording to His ^opromise, ¹²look for ^onew ^sheavens and a new ^searth,</p> <p>q ^owherein ^odwelleth ^orighteousness.</p> <p>B Q r 14 Wherefore, ¹beloved,</p> <p>s seeing that ye ¹²look for ^osuch things,</p> <p>t ^obe diligent that ye may be found ^oof Him ¹in peace, ^owithout spot, and ^oblameless.</p> <p>u 15. And ^saccount that the longsuffering of our ²Lord is salvation;</p> <p>R even as our ¹beloved brother Paul also, ¹³according to the wisdom given ¹unto him, ^ohath written ¹unto you;</p> <p>16 As ^oalso ¹in all his epistles, ^ospeaking ¹in them ^oof these things; ¹in which are ^osome things ^ohard to be understood, which they that are ^ounlearned and ^ounstable ^owrest, as they ^{do}also the other Scriptures, ^ounto their own ^odestruction.</p> <p>Q r 17 ^oTherefore, ¹beloved,</p> <p>s seeing ye ^oknow these things before,</p> <p>t ^obeware ^olest ye also, being ^oled away with the error of the ^owicked, ^ofall from your own ^osteadfastness.</p> <p>u 18 But grow ¹in ^ograce, and ⁱⁿ the ^oknowledge of our ²Lord and Saviour ^oJesus Christ.</p> <p>A To Him be ^oglory both now and ^ofor ever. Amen.</p>	<p>3. 10-13 (P, p. 1868). THE DAY OF THE LORD. (Extended Alternation.)</p> <p>P n 10-. The Day certain though unexpected. o -10. Heavens and earth destroyed. p 11-. Dissolved. q -11. Holiness. n 12-. The Day desired. o -12. Heavens and earth destroyed. p 13-. Re-Creation. q -13. Righteousness.</p> <p>10 in the night. The texts omit. Cp. 1 Thess. 5. 2, 4. with a great noise—with a rushing sound. Gr. <i>rhoizēdon</i>. Only here. elements. See Gal. 4. 3. melt=be dissolved. Gr. <i>lūō</i>, to loose. Cp. Ap. 174. 11. with fervent heat=being burnt up. Gr. <i>kausōō</i>. Only here and v. 12. therein=in (Ap. 104. viii) it. burned up. See 1 Cor. 3. 15. 11 dissolved. See "melt", v. 10. be. See Luko 9. 48. conversation. See 1 Pet. 1. 15. godliness. See 1 Tim. 2. 2. 12 Looking for. Ap. 183. III. 3. See Luke 3. 15 (be in expectation). hasting unto=hastening. Gr. <i>speudō</i>. Elsewhere intransitive. Luke 19. 5. Acts 22. 18; &c. Man can neither hinder nor advance the kingdom of God. But here the meaning is "Looking for, yes and earnestly looking for, the coming of the day of God". wherein = on account of (Ap. 104. v. 2) which (pl.). being on fire. See Eph. 6. 16 (fiery). melt. Gr. <i>lōkomai</i>. Only here. 13 according to. Ap. 104. x. 2. promise. See 1. 4. Is. 65. 17; 66. 22. now. Gr. <i>kainos</i>. See Matt. 9. 17. wherein=in (Ap. 104. viii) which. dwelleth. See Acts 2. 5. righteousness. Ap. 191. 3.</p> <p>3. 14-18-(B, p. 1868). EXHORTATION. (Introversion and Extended Alternation.)</p> <p>B Q r 14-. Address. s -14-. Reason. t -14. Warning as to conduct. u 15-. The Lord's longsuffering. E -15, 16. Confirmation by Paul.</p> <p>Q r 17-. Address. s -17-. Reason. t -17. Warning as to falling away. u 18-. Knowledge of the Lord.</p> <p>14 such=these. be diligent. See 1. 10.</p> <p>15 hath written = wrote. Some think this refers to the Epistle to the Hebrews. 16 also, &c.=in all his epistles also. speaking. Ap. 121. 7. of. Ap. 104. xiii. 1. some. Ap. 124. 4 (neut.). hard, &c. Gr. <i>dusnōōtos</i>. Only here. unlearned. Gr. <i>amathēs</i>. Only here. Cp. Acts 4. 13. 1 Cor. 14. 16. 2 Tim. 2. 23. unstable. See 2. 14. wrest. Gr. <i>streblōō</i>. Only here and in Sept. of 2 Sam. 22. 27 (m. wrestle). It means to strain or twist, and so to torture. Occ. in Apocrypha. also, &c.=the other (Ap. 124. 3) Scriptures also. Note that St. Paul's epistles are called "Scripture". unto. Ap. 104. xv. 3. destruction. Same as "perdition", v. 7. 17 know... before. Gr. <i>proginōskōō</i>. Ap. 132. I. iv. beware = be on your guard. lest = in order that (Gr. <i>hina</i>) not (Gr. <i>mē</i>, as in v. 8). led away. Gr. <i>sunapagomat</i>. See Rom. 12. 16. Gal. 2. 13. wicked. See 2. 7. fall. Gr. <i>ekpiptōō</i>. Occ. Gal. 5. 4. steadfastness. Gr. <i>stērigmos</i>. Only here. The verb in 1. 12. 18 grace. Ap. 184. I. 1. knowledge. Ap. 182. II. 1. Jesus Christ. Ap. 98. XI. glory. See p. 1511. for ever. Ap. 151. II. A. ii. 5.</p>	

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

THE *NEPHILIM*, OR "GIANTS" OF GENESIS 6, ETC.

Appendix 25 from *The Companion Bible*.

The progeny of the fallen angels with the daughters of Adam (see notes on Genesis 6, and Appendix 23) are called in Genesis 6, *Ne-phil'im*, which means *fallen ones* (from *naphal, to fall*). What these beings were can be gathered only from Scripture. They were evidently great in size, as well as great in wickedness. They were superhuman, abnormal beings; and their destruction was necessary for the preservation of the human race, and for the faithfulness of Jehovah's Word (Genesis 3:15).

This was why the Flood was brought "upon the world of the ungodly" (2Peter 2:5) as prophesied by Enoch (Jude 14).

But we read of the *Nephilim* again in Numbers 13:33 : "there we saw the *Nephilim*, the sons of Anak, which come of the *Nephilim*". How, it may be asked, could this be, if they were all destroyed in the Flood? The answer is contained in Genesis 6:4, where we read:

"There were *Nephilim* in the earth in those days (that is to say, in the days of Noah); and also **AFTER THAT**, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became [the] mighty men (Hebrew *gibbor*, the heroes) which were of old, men of renown" (literally, *men of the name*, that is to say, who got a name and were renowned for their ungodliness).

So that "after that", that is to say, after the Flood, there was a *second* irruption of these fallen angels, evidently smaller in number and more limited in area, for they were for the most part confined to Canaan, and were in fact known as "the nations of Canaan". It was for the destruction of these, that the sword of

Israel was necessary, as the Flood had been before.

As to the date of this second irruption, it was evidently soon after it became known that the seed was to come through Abraham; for, when he came out from Haran (Genesis 12:6) and entered Canaan, the significant fact is stated: "The Canaanite was then (that is to say, *already*) in the land." And in Genesis 14:5 they were already known as "Rephaim" and "Emim", and had established themselves as Ashteroth Karnaim and Shaveh Kiriathaim.

In chapter 15:18-21 they are enumerated and named among Canaanite Peoples: "Kenites, and the Kenizzites, and the Kadmonites, and the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the Rephaims, and the Amorites, and the Girgashites, and the Jebusites" (Genesis 15:19-21; compare Exodus 3:8,17; 23:23. Deuteronomy 7; 20:17. Joshua 12:8).

These were to be cut off, and driven out, and utterly destroyed (Deuteronomy 20:17. Joshua 3:10). But Israel failed in this (Joshua 13:13; 15:63; 16:10; 17:18. Judges 1:19,20,28,29,30-36; 2:1-5; 3:1-7); and we know not how many got away to other countries to escape the general destruction. If this were recognized it would go far to solve many problems connected with Anthropology.

As to their other names, they were called *Anakim*, from one Anak which came of the *Nephilim* (Numbers 13:22,33), and *Rephaim*, from Rapha, another notable one among them.

From Deuteronomy 2:10, they were known by some as *Emim*, and *Horim*, and *Zamzumim* (verse 20,21) and *Avim*, etc.

THE COMPANION BIBLE APPENDIX 25: THE NEPHALIM OF GENESIS 6

As **Rephaim** they were well known, and are often mentioned: but, unfortunately, instead of this, their proper name, being preserved, it is variously translated as "dead", "deceased", or "giants". These **Rephaim** are to have no resurrection. This fact is stated in Isaiah 26:14 (where the proper name is rendered "deceased", and verse 19, where it is rendered "the dead").

It is rendered "dead" seven times (Job 26:5. Psalm 88:10. Proverbs 2:18; 9:18; 21:16. Isaiah 14:8; 26:19).

It is rendered "deceased" in Isaiah 26:14.

It is retained as proper name "**Rephaim**" ten times (two being in the margin). Genesis 14:5; 15:20. Joshua 12:15 (margin). 2Samuel 5:18,22; 23:13. 1Chronicles 11:15; 14:9; 20:4 (margin). Isaiah 17:5.

In all other places it is rendered "giants", Genesis 6:4, Numbers 23:33, where it is **Nephilim**; and Job 16:14, where it is **gibbor** (Appendix 14. iv).

By reading all these passages the Bible student may know all that can be known about these beings.

It is certain that the second irruption took place before Genesis 14, for there the **Rephaim** were mixed up with the five nations or peoples, which included Sodom and Gomorrha, and were defeated by the four kings under Chedorlaomer. Their principal locality was evidently "Ashtaroth Karnaim"; while the **Emim** were in the plain of Kiriathaim (Genesis 14:5).

Anak was a noted descendant of the **Nephilim**; and **Rapha** was another, giving their names respectively to different clans. Anak's father was **Arba**, the original builder of Hebron (Genesis 35:27. Joshau 15:13; 21:11); and this Palestine branch of the **Anakim** was not called **Arbahim** after him, but **Anakim** after Anak. They

were great, mighty, and tall (Deuteronomy 2:10,11,21,22,23; 9:2), evidently inspiring the ten spies with great fear (Numbers 13:33). Og king of Bashan is described in Deuteronomy 3:11.

Their strength is seen in "the giant cities of Bashan" to-day; and we know not how far they may have been utilized by Egypt in the construction of buildings, which is still an unsolved problem.

Arba was rebuilt by the **Khabiri** or confederates seven years before Zoan was built by Egyptian Pharaohs of the nineteenth dynasty. See note on Numbers 13:22.

If these **Nephilim**, and their branch of **Rephaim**, were associated with Egypt, we have an explanation of the problem which has for ages perplexed all engineers, as to how those huge stones and monuments were brought together. Why not in Egypt as well as in "the giant cities of Bashan" which exist, as such, to this day?

Moreover, we have in these mighty men, the "men of renown," the explanation of the origin of the Greek mythology. That mythology was no mere **invention** of the human brain, but it grew out of the traditions, and memories, and legends of the doings of that mighty race of beings; and was gradually evolved out of the "heroes" of Genesis 6:4. The fact that they were supernatural in their origin formed an easy step to their being regarded as the demi-gods of the Greeks.

Thus the Babylonian "Creation Tablets", the Egyptian "Book of the dead", the Greek mythology, and heathen Cosmogonies, which by some are set on an equality with Scripture, or by others adduced in support of it, are all the corruption and perversion of primitive truths, distorted in proportion as their origin was forgotten, and their memories faded away.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

The Synonymous Words for "World", "Earth", etc. Appendix 129 from *The Companion Bible*.

There are four Greek words which are thus translated; and it is important that they should be, in each occurrence, carefully distinguished. They are as follows:—

1. **Kosmos** = the world as created, ordered, and arranged. Hence it is used in the LXX [Septaugint] for the Hebrew word rendered "ornament". See Exodus 33:5, 6. Isaiah 49:18. Jeremiah 4:30. Ezekiel 7:20, etc. It denotes the opposite of what man has called "chaos", which God never created. See notes on Isaiah 45:18 and Genesis 1:2: for the Hebrew **bāra'** means not only to create, but that what was created was beautiful. The root, meaning to carve, plane, polish, implies both order and beauty. Compare Appendix 146.

2. **aiōn** = an age, or age-time, the duration of which is indefinite, and may be limited or extended as the context of each occurrence may demand.

The root meaning of **aiōn** is expressed by the Hebrew **'olām** (see Appendix 151.I.A and II.A) which denotes indefinite, unknown or concealed duration: just as we speak of "the patriarchal age", or "the golden age", etc. Hence, it has come to denote any given period of time, characterized by a special form of Divine administration or dispensation.

In the plural we have the Hebrew **'olāmīm** and Greek **'aiōnes** used of ages, or of a succession of age-times, and of an abiding from age to age. From this comes the adjective, **aiōnios** (Appendix 151.II.B), used of an

unrestricted duration, as distinct from a particular or limited age-time. These age-times must be distinct or they could not be added to, or multiplied, as in the expression **aiōns** of **aiōns**.

These ages or age-times were all prepared and arranged by God (see Hebrews 1:2; 11:3); and there is a constant distinction in the New Testament between "this age", and the "coming age" (see Matthew 12:32. Hebrews 1:2. Ephesians 1:21).

"This age" is characterized by such passages as Matthew 13:24–30, 36–43. Mark 4:19; 10:30. Romans 12:2. 1 Corinthians 2:8. 2 Corinthians 4:4. Galatians 1:4. Ephesians 2:2. (transl. "course"). 2 Timothy 4:10. Titus 2:12.

The "coming age" is characterized in such passages as Matthew 13:39,40,49; 24:3; 28:20. Mark 10:30. Luke 18:30; 20:35. 1 Corinthians 15:23. Titus 2:13.

The conjunction of these ages is spoken of as the **sunteleia**, marking the end of one age and the beginning of another.

Other indefinite durations are mentioned, but they always refer to some unknown and prolonged continuance, the end of which cannot be seen; such as the end of life (Exodus 21:6). Hence the Hebrew Priesthood was so characterized because its end could not be foreseen (see Exodus 40:15. 1 Samuel 1:22. Hebrews 7:12). It is used in the same way in other connections (see Matthew 21:19. John 8:35). For further information see Appendix 151.II.A.

APPENDIX #: THE COMPANION BIBLE—SYNONYMOUS WORDS FOR WORLD

3. *oikoumenē* = the world as inhabited. It is from the verb *oikeō* = to dwell. It is used of the habitable world, as distinct from the *kosmos* (Number 1 above, which = the world as *created*). Hence, it used in a more limited and special sense of the Roman Empire, which was then predominant. See Luke 2:1; 4:5; 21:26. It is sometimes put by the Figure of

Speech *Metonymy* (of the *Adjunct*), Appendix 6, for the inhabitants (Acts 17:6,31. Hebrews 2:5, etc.).

4. *gē* = land, as distinct from water; or earth as distinct from heaven; or region or territory, used of one special land, or country, as distinct from other countries, in which peoples dwell, each on its own soil.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD

Appendix 146 from *The Companion Bible*

To arrive at the true meaning of this expression, we must note that there are two words translated "foundation" in the New Testament: (1) **themelios**, and (2) **katabolē**.

The Noun, **themelios**, occurs in Luke 6:48–49, 14:29, Acts 16:26, Romans 15:20, 1 Corinthians 3:10–12, Ephesians 2:20, 1 Timothy 6:19, 2 Timothy 2:19, Hebrews 6:1, 11:10, Revelation 21:14,19. It is never used of the world (**kosmos**) or the earth (**gē**). The corresponding Verb (**themelioō**) occurs in Matthew 7:25, Luke 6:48, Ephesians 3:17, Colossians 1:23, Hebrews 1:10 and 1 Peter 5:10. The verb is only once used of the earth (**gē**). Hebrews 1:10.

A comparison of all these passages will show that these are proper and regular terms for the English words "to found", and "foundation".

The Noun, **katabolē**, occurs in Matthew 13:35, 25:34, Luke 11:50, John 17:24, Ephesians 1:4, Hebrews 4:3, 9:26, 11:11, 1 Peter 1:20, Revelation 13:8, 17:8 and the corresponding Verb (**kataballō**) occurs in 2 Corinthians 4:9, Hebrews 6:1 and Revelation 12:10.

A comparison of all these passages (especially 2 Corinthians 4:9 and Revelation 12:10) will show that **kataballō** and **katabolē** are not the proper terms for founding and foundation, but the correct meaning is **casting down**, or **overthrow**.

Consistency, therefore, calls for the same translation in Hebrews 6:1, where,

instead of "not laying again", the rendering should be "not casting down". That is to say, the foundation already laid, of repentance, etc., was not to be cast down or overthrown, but was to be *left* and progress made unto the perfection.

Accordingly, the Noun **katabolē**, derived from, and cognate with the Verb, ought to be translated "disruption", or "ruin".

The remarkable thing is that in all occurrences (except Hebrews 11:11) the word is connected with "the world" (Greek **kosmos**. Appendix 129.1), and therefore the expression should be rendered "the disruption (or ruin) of the world", clearly referring to the condition indicated in Genesis 1:2, and described in 2 Peter 3:5–6. For the earth was not created **tohū** (Isaiah 45:18) but **became** so, as stated in the Hebrew of Genesis 1:2 and confirmed by 2 Peter 3:6, where "the world that then was by the word of God" (Genesis 1:1), perished and "the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word" were created (Genesis 2:4), and are "kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment" (2 Peter 3:7) which shall usher in the "new heavens and the new earth" of 2 Peter 3:13.

"The disruption of the world" is an event forming a great dividing line in the dispensations of the ages. In Genesis 1:1 we have the **founding** of the world (Hebrews 1:10 = **themelioō**), but in Genesis 1:2 we have its **overthrow**.

This is confirmed by a further remarkable fact, that the phrase, which

THE COMPANION BIBLE APPENDIX 146: THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD

occurs ten times, is associated with the Preposition **apo** = from (Appendix 104. iv) seven times, and with **pro** = before (Appendix 104. xiv) three times. The former refers to the **kingdom**, and is connected with the "counsels" of God; the latter refers to the Mystery (or Secret; See Appendix 193) and is connected with the "purpose" of God (see John 17:24, Ephesians 1:4, 1 Peter 1:20).

Ample New Testament testimony is thus given to the profoundly significant fact recorded in Genesis 1:2, that "the earth became **tohū** and **bohū** (i.e. waste and desolate); and darkness was on the face of the deep", before the creation of "the heavens and the earth which are now" (2 Peter 3:7).

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

THE SYNONYMOUS WORDS FOR "POWER", ETC.

Appendix 172 from *The Companion Bible*

1. ***dunamis*** = inherent power; the power of reproducing itself: from which we have English dynamics, dynamo, etc. See Acts 1:8.
2. ***kratos*** = strength (as exerted); power put forth with effect, and in government: from which we have the English theocracy, government by God: aristocracy, government by the best; democracy, government by the people. The Greek ***enkrateia*** = mastery over one's self = self-control, or having one's self reined in (from ***krateia***, a rein). This (that is to say, ***enkrateia***) is the only word rendered "temperance," and occurs only in Acts 24:25. Galatians 5:23. 2 Peter 1:6, 6.
3. ***ischus*** = strength (as an endowment), physical strength possessed. See, for example, Mark 12:30.
4. ***energeia*** = energy; strength (No. 3 above) put forth from within in effectual operation. See, for example, 2 Thessalonians 2:9.
5. ***exousia*** = authority, or delegated power; the liberty and right to put forth power. See, for example, John 1: 12.
6. ***archē*** = beginning; then, the chief rule or ruler. See Luke 12: 11 (magistrates).

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

CHURCH

(Greek *EKKLĒSIA*)

Appendix 186 To *The Companion Bible*

1. The Greek word *ekklēsia* means *assembly*, or a gathering of *called-out ones*. It is used seventy times in the Septuagint for the Hebrew *kāhāl* (from which latter we have our word *call*), rendered in Septuagint by *sunagōgē* and *ekklēsia*⁶⁶. This latter word occurs in New Testament 115 times (36 in plural), and is always translated "church" except in Acts 19:32, 39, 41 (*assembly*).

2. *kāhāl* is used (1) of Israel as a People *called out* from the rest of the nations (Genesis 28:3); (2) of the tribal council of Simeon and Levi, those *called out* from each tribe (Genesis 49:6); (3) of an assembly of Israelites called out for worship or any other purpose (Deuteronomy 18:16; 31:30. Joshua 8:35. Judges 21:8); (4) any assembly of worshippers as a congregation (Psalm 22:22, 25. *Ekklēsia* in Matthew 16:18; (18:17. 1 Corinthians 14:19, 35, etc.); (5) the equivalent *ekklēsia* of separate assemblies in different localities (Acts 5:11; 8:3. 1 Corinthians 4:17, etc.); (6) of the guild or "union" of Ephesian craftsmen (Acts 19:32, 41), and verse 39 (the lawful assembly). Finally, the special Pauline usage of *ekklēsia* differs from all these. Other assemblies consisted of *called-out ones* from Jews, or from Gentiles (Acts 18:22), but this new body is of *called-out ones* from both.

3. Our word "church"⁶⁷ has an equally varied usage. It is used (1) of any congregation; (2) of a particular church (England, or Rome, etc); (3) of the ministry of a church; (4) of the building in which the congregation assembles; (5) of Church as distinct from Chapel; (6) of the church as distinct from the world, and lastly, it is used in the Pauline sense, of the body of Christ.

4. It is of profound importance to distinguish the usage of the word in each case, else we may be reading "the church which was in the wilderness" into the Prison Epistles, although we are expressly told that there is neither Jew nor Gentile in the "church which is His body". And when our Lord said "On this rock I will build my church" (Matthew 16:18), those who heard His words could not connect them with the "mystery" which was "hid in God" and had not then been made known to the sons of men. Confusion follows our reading what refers to Israel in the past or the

⁶⁶ *kāhāl* occurs in the Old Testament 123 times; congregation eighty-six, assembly seventeen, company seventeen, and multitude three times. The Septuagint uses *sunagōgē* and *ekklēsia* as practically synonymous terms. But the *sunagōgē* concerns the bringing together of the members of an existing society or body excluding all others, whereas the *ekklēsia* calls and invites all men, including outsiders everywhere, to join it. *Sunagōgē* being permanently associated with Jewish worship, was dropped by the early Christians in favor of *ekklēsia* as of wider import.

⁶⁷ Is derived from the Greek *kuriakos*, of or belonging to the Lord, house (Greek *oikos*) being understood. It comes to us through Anglo-Saxon *circe* (Scottish *kirk*).

THE COMPANION BIBLE APPENDIX 186: CHURCH (GREEK *EKKLĒSIA*)

future into the present dispensation. Readers are referred to the various notes in the connexions.

5. The word where qualified by other terms occurs thus:—

Church of God; Acts 20:28. 1 Corinthians 1:2; 10:32; 11:16 (plural), 22; 15:9. 2 Corinthians 1:1. Galatians 1:13. 1 Thessalonians 2:14 (plural). 2 Thessalonians 1:4 (plural). 1 Timothy 3:5, 15 (c. of the living God).

Churches of Christ; Romans 16:16.

Church in ... house; Romans 16:5. 1 Corinthians 16:19. Colossians 4:15. Philemon 2.

Churches of the Gentiles; Romans 16:4.

Churches of Galatia; 1 Corinthians 16:1. Galatians 1:2.

Of Asia; 1 Corinthians 16:19. Of Macedonia; 2 Corinthians 8:1.

Of Judaea; Galatians 1:22.

Of the Laodiceans; Colossians 4:16.

Of the Thessalonians; 1 Thessalonians 1:1; 2 Thessalonians 1:1.

Church of the firstborn (plural); Hebrews 12:23.

Church in Ephesus, Smyrna, etc. Revelation 2 and 3; and

Churches; Revelation 22:16.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

THE "MYSTERY"

This Is Appendix 193 from *The Companion Bible*

The English word "mystery" is a transliteration of the Greek word *musterion*⁶⁸, which means a sacred *secret*.

It occurs in the Septuagint Version (280 B.C.) nine times as the equivalent for the Chaldee *raz* in the Chaldee portion of "Daniel", which means to *conceal*; hence, *something concealed* that can be revealed, viz. in Daniel 2:18, 19, 27, 28, 29, 30, 47; and 4:9.

It occurs frequently in the Apocryphal books; which, though of no use for establishing doctrine, are of great value in determining the meaning of Biblical usage of Greek words. In these books *musterion* always means the *secret* of friends, or of a king, etc.⁶⁹ See Tobit 12:7,11. Judith 2:2. Wisdom 2:22. (transliterated "mysteries"); 14:23.

Ecclesiastics 22:22; 27:16,17,21. 2Maccabees 13:21. (Revised Version1). The passage in Judith is remarkable: for Nabuchodonsor calls his captains and great men together just before entering on a campaign, and "communicated with them his secret counsel", literally "the mystery of his will". This is exactly the same usage as in Ephesians 1:9, except that the Greek word for will or counsel is different.⁷⁰

By the end of the second century A.D. it was used interchangeably with *tupos* (= type), *symbolon* (= symbol), and *parabole* (= parable).

When we find the Greek word *musterion* rendered *sacramentum* in Latin Vulgate of Ephesians 5:32, it is clear that it was used as meaning a *secret sign* or *symbol*, and not in the modern meaning put upon the word "Sacrament", i.e. "holy mysteries".

It is evident to all that God has made known His will "at sundry times and in divers manners" (Hebrews 1:1,2). He also kept certain things secret, and revealed them from time to time according to His purpose and counsels. Hence the word *musterion* is connected with several *concealed* or *secret* things in the New Testament.

1. It was used of the *secrets of the kingdom*; which had been concealed, until the Lord revealed them to His disciples (not to the People) in Matthew 13:10,11. It had not before been known that the kingdom would be rejected, and that there would be a long interval between that rejection

⁶⁸ It is from *mueo* = to initiate or admit to secrets; and *mustes* was used of the person so initiated.

⁶⁹ In subsequent Revision of the Septuagint *Theodotion* (A.D. 160) uses it for the Hebrew *sod* (Job 15:8. Psalms 25:14. Proverbs 20:19). See Notes *in loc*.

⁷⁰ In Judith 2:2 it is *boule* ([Appendix 102. 4](#)), while in Ephesians 1:9 it is *thelema* ([Appendix 102. 2](#)).

CB APPENDIX 193: THE "MYSTERY"

- and its being set up in glory. This was concealed even from the prophets who foretold it (1Peter 1:10-12).
2. In Romans 11 it is used in connection with the duration of Israel's blindness. That blindness itself was not a secret, for it had been foretold in Isaiah 6:9,10. But the **duration** of the blindness was kept a "secret" from Isaiah and only revealed through Paul (Romans 11:25).
 3. It was used of a fact connected with resurrection, which had never before been made known to the sons of men.

The Lord had spoken of it to Martha (John 11:25,26), but though she believed it, she did not understand that to those who should be alive and remain to His Coming the Lord would be "the life", and they would "never die" (verse 26).

The Thessalonians who "received the word" were not left in ignorance of it (1Thessalonians 4:13), for the Lord's words in John 11:25,26. were explained to them.

But in 1Corinthians 15:51 the secret was fully and plainly shown; and it was that "we shall not all sleep". Up to that moment the universal belief had been that we must all die (compare Hebrews 9:27).

Thenceforward it was revealed and made known for faith that all would not die, but that those who are alive and remain (literally; remain over) unto the Lord's Coming will not die at all (see note 1Thessalonians 4:15, and compare Philipians 3:14).

4. Side by side with these Divine secrets there was the secret of the **[foretold]** lawlessness (2Thessalonians 2:7 compare Daniel 12:4). It was already working during the dispensation covered by "Acts"; and had the nation repented at the call of those "other servants" of Matthew 22:4 (Acts 2:38; 3:12-26; etc.), those secret counsels of "the lawless one" and "the transgressors" would have "come to the full" (Daniel 8:23). But now they are postponed and in abeyance until the appointed time.
5. But "the great secret" which concerns us to-day was not revealed until after the close of that dispensation covered by "Acts". (See Acts 28:17-31 and Appendix 180 and 181.)

Paul was not commissioned to put in writing the "purpose" of God which was "**before** the overthrow of the World" ([Appendix 146](#)), until that dispensation was ended.

What this "great secret" was can only be learned fully from the Prison Epistles. There alone can we find the things which had been concealed and kept secret "since the world began" (Romans 16:25); "which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men" (Ephesians 3:5); "which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God" (Ephesians 3:9); "which hath been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest" (Colossians 1:26), where "now" (Greek; **nun**) with the preterit = just now, recently.

CB APPENDIX 193: THE "MYSTERY"

The special Scriptures which describe this secret are the postscript of Romans 16:25,26. Ephesians 3:1-12. Colossians 1:24-27.

The mention of "the mystery" in Romans 16:25,26. has perplexed many, because the revelation of it is specifically propounded in the Epistle of Ephesians.

Hence it has been suggested that the Epistle originally ended at Romans 16:24 with the **Benediction** (or even at verse 20 (see the marginal notes in the Revised Version), and that the **ascription** (verses 25-27) was added by the apostle after he reached Rome (1) in order to complete the Structure by making it correspond with the ascription in chapter 11:33-36; and (2) to complete the **Epanodos** or **Introversion**, and thus to contrast "God's gospel", which was revealed of old by the prophets of the Old Testament and never hidden (1:2,3), with the mystery which was always hidden and never revealed or even mentioned until 16:25-27.

In any case while there is no doubt about the general order of the Epistles, the actual dates are conjectural, and rest only upon individual opinions as to the internal evidence (Appendix 180). And, after all, Romans 16:25-27 is not the revelation of the mystery as given in the Prison Epistle, but an ascription of glory to Him Who had at length made it manifest by prophetic writings (not "the writings of the prophets", for it is the adjective "prophetic", not the noun "prophecy" as in 2Peter 1:20).

Romans and **Ephesians** are thus brought together as the two central Epistles of the chronological groups: the one ending one group, and the other beginning the next, both being treatises rather than epistles, and both having Paul for their sole author, while in all the other Epistles he has others associated with him.

As to the great secret itself, it is certain that it cannot refer to the blessing of Gentiles in connection with Israel. This is perfectly clear from the fact that that was **never a secret**. Both blessings were made known at the very same time (Genesis 12:3); and this well-known fact is constantly referred to in the Old Testament. See Genesis 22:18; 26:4; etc. Deuteronomy 32:8. Psalms 18:49; 67:1,2; 72:17; 117:1. Isaiah 11:10; 49:6. Luke 2:32. Romans 15:8-12.

But the secret revealed in the Prison Epistles was never the subject of previous revelation.

In Ephesians 3:5. it is stated to be "now revealed". This cannot mean that it had been revealed before, but not in the same manner as "now"; because it is stated that it had never been revealed at all.

It concerns the Gentiles; and it was "revealed unto His holy apostles⁷¹ and prophets by the Spirit", that the Gentiles should be joint-heirs, and a joint-body⁷², and **[joint]** partakers of the promise in Christ through the gospel (see the Notes on Ephesians 3:5,6).

⁷¹ These were not those of the Old Testament dispensation, but were the subjects of a promise by the Lord Himself in Matthew 23:34. Luke 11:49. which was fulfilled in Ephesians 4:8,11. See the notes on these passages and Appendix 189.

⁷² Greek **sussomos**, a remarkable word occurring only here in the New Testament.

CB APPENDIX 193: THE "MYSTERY"

We cannot know the whole purpose of God in keeping this concealed all through the ages; but one thing we can clearly see, videlicet that had God made it known before, Israel would of necessity have had an excuse for rejecting the Messiah and His Kingdom.

As to ourselves, the question of "Who is in the secret?" does not arise. For we are not to suppose that all who do not know of it are "lost".

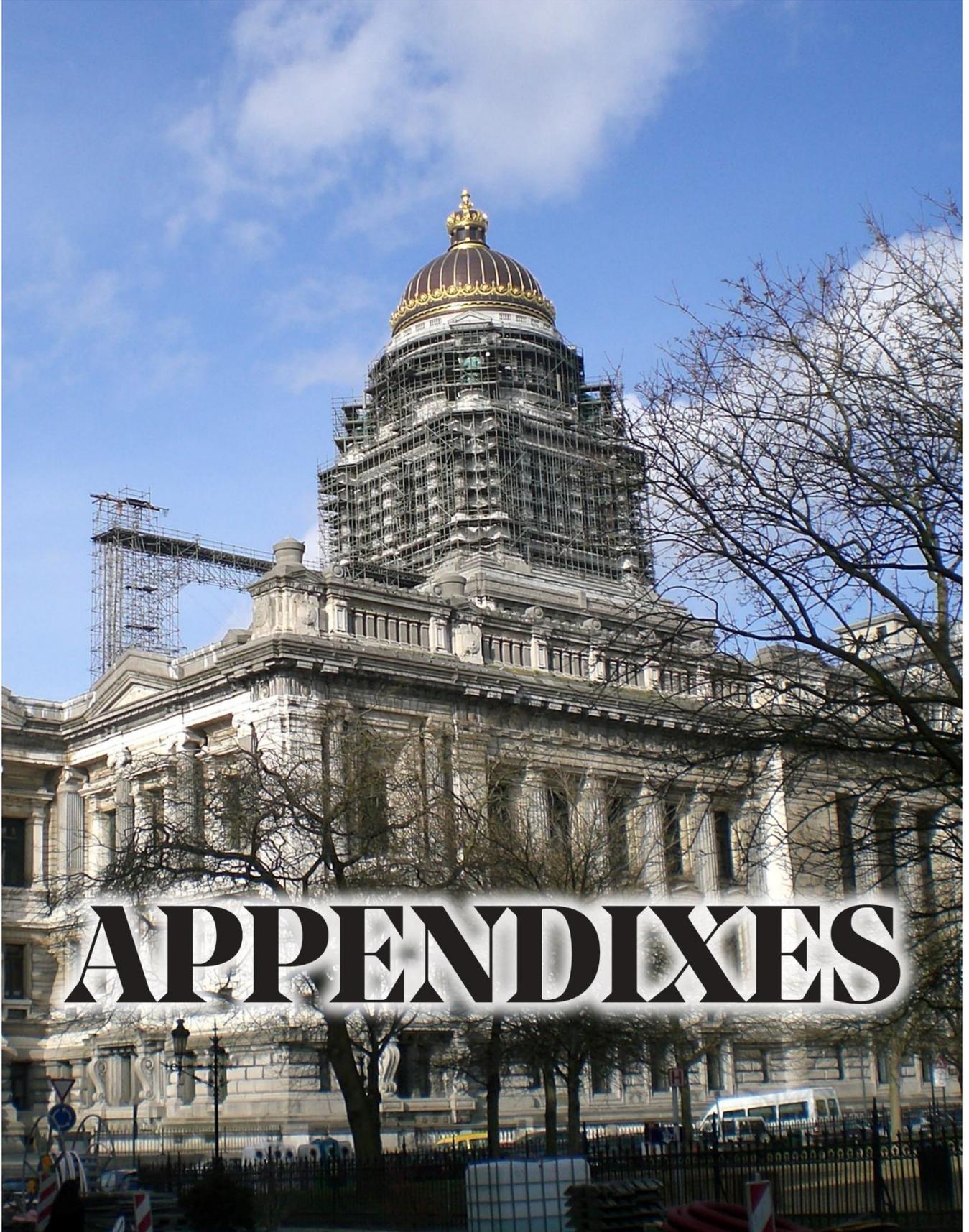
One thing we know, and that is: it is made known for "the obedience of faith", or for "faith-obedience" (Romans 16:26).

It is a ***subsequent revelation***; and the question is, do we believe it and obey it by acting according to it?

Abraham had several Divine revelations made to him. From this call in Genesis 11 he was a "righteous" man. In chapter 12 he believed God concerning His promises of the future. In chapter 13 he believed God concerning the promise of the Land. But in chapter 15 God made a further revelation concerning the seed which He would give him; and it is written, "Abraham believed in the Lord, and it was counted (or imputed) unto him for righteousness".

Even so with ourselves and the subsequent revelation of the mystery in the Prison Epistles. Let us believe it, and we may be sure it will be counted unto us for something, for some blessing, which those who refuse to believe it will lose.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)



APPENDIXES

APPENDIX 1: THE WORLD THAT THEN WAS

Lesson Appendix 1

THE WORLD THAT THEN WAS

Genesis 1:1–2 KJV

Gen. 1:1 ¶ In the beginning God created the heaven[s] and the earth.

Gen. 1:2 And the earth was **without form [tohu], and void[bohu]**; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.

Only God could state so succinctly all that is contained in verse one. What it does not contain is verse two.

To me, the greatest proof of a pre-Adamic civilization is the meaning of these two Hebrew words:

“without form and void” = Tohu v’bohu

Strong’s Hebrew

8414. תֹהוּ **tōhûw**, to’-hoo; ... confusion, empty place, without form, nothing, (thing of) nought, vain, vanity, waste, wilderness.

922. בֹהוּ **bōhûw**, bo’-hoo; from an unused root (meaning to *be empty*); a *vacuity*, i.e. (superficially) an undistinguishable *ruin*:—emptiness, void.

Brown, Driver, Briggs

תֹהוּ [tōhûw] noun. masculine. formlessness, confusion, unreality, emptiness —

1. *formlessness*, of *primaeval earth*, of land reduced to *primaeval chaos (and voidness)*; *city of chaos* (of ruined city); = *nothingness, empty space*; of empty, trackless waste.

2. fig. of what is *empty, unreal*, as idols (coll. of idol makers), groundless arguments or considerations, moral unreality or falsehood; = *a thing of nought, worthlessness*.⁷³

בֹהוּ [bōhûw] noun [masculine] emptiness, always with בֹהוּ —cross reference תֹהוּ וְבֹהוּ [Genesis 1:2](#) of primeval earth; [Jeremiah 4:23](#) **of earth under judgment**.⁷⁴

God certainly did not create a chaotic, confused, worthless, empty wasteland.

God’s creation in Genesis 1:1 was perfect. For His work is perfect and glorious.

⁷³ Francis Brown, S. R. Driver, and Charles A Briggs, *A Hebrew and English Lexicon of the Old Testament* (1907; repr., London: Oxford University Press, 1966), 1062.

⁷⁴ Brown, Driver, and Briggs, 96.

APPENDIX 1: THE WORLD THAT THEN WAS

God's Work Is Perfect

Deuteronomy 32:4 KJV *He is the Rock, his work is perfect ...*

God's Work Is Glorious

Psalms 111:3 KJV *His work is honourable [1935] and glorious [1926] ...*

"honourable and glorious"

Strong's Hebrew

1935. הוֹדָה *hōwd, hode*; from an unused root; *grandeur* (i.e. an imposing form and appearance):—beauty, comeliness, excellency, glorious, glory, goodly, honour, majesty.

1926. הַדָּרָה *hâdâr, haw-dawr'*; from 1921; *magnificence*, i.e. ornament or splendor:—beauty, comeliness, excellency, glorious, glory, goodly, honour, majesty.

God declared His work from the second day through the fifth day "good." And then, after the sixth day and the creation of man, He called His creative work "very good."

Genesis 1:31 ¶ And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, *it was very good.* And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.

Genesis 1:1 describes Creation in Eternity Past—before time.

Genesis 1:2 describes the condition of earth after a **cataclysmic** event.

Genesis 1:2 begins the account of "re-creative" days.

There is as much "*time*" between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2 as true science requires.

... scientists have calculated that Earth is 4.54 billion years old, with an error range of 50 million years.⁷⁵

Brim note: Only God knows how old earth is—but this is the latest theory.

I certainly believe it is more than 6,000 years old which is when Adam was created, and time (as we know it) began.

God: Eternity and Time

On my first trip to Australia, I called my daughter Brenda. Her then young and very inquisitive son, Jared, answered the phone. I decided to get him going, so I said, "Hello, Jared, this is MiMi. I'm calling from tomorrow. Don't be concerned about yesterday; it turned out all right."

⁷⁵ Nola Taylor Tillman, "How old is Earth?" Space.com, August 20, 2021, <https://www.space.com/24854-how-old-is-earth.html>.

APPENDIX 1: THE WORLD THAT THEN WAS

It is possible when flying from Sydney, to arrive in Los Angeles before you left Sydney (that is, as far as time on the clock and calendar is concerned).

On the way home from that first trip, the captain made an announcement that we had just crossed the International Date Line. At that, I heard distinctly the authoritative voice of the Holy Spirit in my spirit.

God invented time—precisely, scientifically, mathematically.

He measured out a piece of eternity and called it “time” for His dealings with man.

Each passing second counts off time until the end of time and its usefulness to God.

God Inhabits Eternity

Isaiah 57:15 ASV For thus saith the high and lofty One that inhabiteth eternity, whose name is Holy: ...

I used to say that God knows the future better than we know the past. And of course, He does. But it is deeper than that. He knows the future because He lives there. He inhabits Eternity. As His name יהוה declares: *He is, He was, He is to come.*

Kenneth E. Hagin said, “When science discovered timelessness, they discovered God.” God is in no way affected or limited by time, except in His dealings with man.

The World That Then Was

God certainly did not create the heavens and the earth *tohu v'bohu*.

It became *tohu v'bohu* after a **cataclysmic** event.

2 Peter 3:5–6 KJV

2 Pet. 3:5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water:

2 Pet. 3:6 Whereby **the world that then was**, being overflowed with water, perished:

E. W. Bullinger, *The Companion Bible*

1. “THE WORLD THAT THEN WAS” (2 Peter 3:5, 6). . . . Creation in eternity past, to which all Fossils and “Remains” belong.⁷⁶

Notice: Peter records that “the world that then was, being overflowed with water, **perished.**” The world that endured Noah’s flood did not perish. Following is Strong’s definition of the Greek word *apollumi*, which is translated “perished.”

⁷⁶ E. W. Bullinger, *The Companion Bible* (1922; repr., Grand Rapids: Kregel Publications, 1990), 3.

APPENDIX 1: THE WORLD THAT THEN WAS

622. ἀπόλλυμι **apōllumi**, *ap-ol'-loo-mee*; ... to *destroy* fully (reflexively, to *perish* ...), literally or figuratively: — destroy, die, lose, mar, perish.

Not Created *Tohu*, but Became *Tohu*

The Hebrew word *hiyah*, translated “was” in Genesis 1:2—“And the earth was without form and void ...”—can also be translated “became.”

In many places, it is translated “and it was so.”

See Genesis 2:7, 4:3, 9:15, 19:26; Exodus 32:1; Deuteronomy 27:9; 2 Samuel 7:24.

And it is translated “*came to pass*.”

See Genesis 4:14, 22:1, 23:1, 27:1; Joshua 4:1, 5:1; 1 Kings 13:32; Isaiah 14:24.

Strong’s Hebrew Lexicon

1961 הָיָה **hâyâh**, *haw-yaw'* ... primitive root ... to *exist*, i.e. *be* or *become*, *come to pass* ...

Therefore, Genesis 1:2 can be translated:

“And the earth became *tohu v'bohu*.”

**E. W. Bullinger, *The Companion Bible*
Note on Genesis 1:2**

Not created *tohū* (Isaiah 45:18,) but became *tohū* (Gen. 1:2, 2 Pet. 3:5,6).⁷⁷

Isaiah 45:18 KJV For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, **he created it not in vain [tohu]**, he formed it to be inhabited: I *am* the LORD; and *there is* none else.

Brim Note: Isaiah 45:18 is clear. **God did not create the earth *tohu*.** He did not create it a worthless, chaotic wasteland of confusion. He created it to be inhabited.

The Perfect Earth

All the following is quoted from an article by Hart Armstrong in “*The Defender*” *The Family of Faith Magazine* November 1976. (My copy is addressed to Rev. Kenneth E. Hagin.)

Hart Armstrong, *The Defender*

- ... the pre-Adamic earth may have been a Paradise, possibly under the reign of Lucifer, a great created being of ages past, whose rebellion and sin against God

⁷⁷ Bullinger, 3.

APPENDIX 1: THE WORLD THAT THEN WAS

brought downfall to him and destruction to our earth and to the intelligent beings inhabiting it, who may have been under his dominion, under God.

- That this destruction must have come through a universal deluge of waters, similar to that of Noah; for the Bible infers there was a destruction of earth by a flood of waters previous to that of Noah ...

Certainly, knowing God as we do, we should have reason to expect it was a perfect creation. Why should not a perfect God bring forth a perfect creation?

Heavenly Rejoicing

In Job 38 we are given what seems to be a pre-historic picture of the joy and rejoicing in the heavenly realm when God first created the earth. God asks Job, "Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? ... Or laid its cornerstones, when the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?" (Job 38:4, 6, 7).

Is this a poetic figure? Or does it tell of a day which actually occurred? Can we think these sublime sons of God shouted over a chaotic mass such as evolution would have us think originally constituted the earth? Or a planet without form, void and empty, and covered with water and darkness?

No, I believe it was a beautiful world that called forth this oratorio of the sons of God. It was because this planet had been created by God as a place which was to be the sphere of their dominion. Surely among the glorious sons of God that day, the brightest was Lucifer, the best of God's angelic hosts. And it was probably he whom God had selected to be the monarch of the new realm...which God had created.

When did this take place? Only God, and the angels who participated could tell us... Men of science keep pushing farther and farther back into the probable date of the earth's age. Scientists moved back beyond millions of years in their estimates, then to billions—again we say, only God can know the real age of earth.⁷⁸

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

⁷⁸ Hart Armstrong, *The Defender*, November 1976.

APPENDIX 2: LUCIFER'S FALL

Lesson Appendix 2

LUCIFER'S FALL

Genesis 1:1–2 KJV

Gen. 1:1 ¶ In the beginning God created the heaven[s] and the earth.

Gen. 1:2 And the earth was without form [*tohu*], and void [*bohu*]; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.

How It Happened

Bullinger's Note in *The Companion Bible* gives light on the subject:

“An enemy hath done this” (Matt. 13:25, 28, 39. Compare 1 Cor. 14:33).⁷⁹

1 Corinthians 14:33 KJV For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints.

Use the Bible to Interpret the Bible

In another place where *tohu* is used it is plainly stated that God did not create the earth *tohu*. He created it to be inhabited. And it was.

Isaiah 45:18 KJV For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it not in vain [*tohu*], he formed it to be inhabited: I *am* the LORD; and *there is* none else.

A good reference Bible will have a cross reference on Genesis 1:2 to another place where the Hebrew words *tohu v'bohu* are used:

Jeremiah 4:23–26 KJV

Jer. 4:23 I beheld the earth, and, lo, *it was* without form, and void [*tohu v'bohu*]; and the heavens, and they *had* no light.

Jer. 4:24 I beheld the mountains, and, lo, they trembled, and all the hills moved lightly.

Jer. 4:25 I beheld, and, lo, *there was* no man, and all the birds of the heavens were fled.

Jer. 4:26 I beheld, and, lo, the fruitful place *was* a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the LORD, *and* by his fierce anger.

God caused Jeremiah to look into eternity past and to see the day when judgment fell on “the world that then was” and earth became *tohu v'bohu*. For the prophet clearly describes a horrifying day when:

⁷⁹ E. W. Bullinger, *The Companion Bible* (1922; repr., Grand Rapids: Kregel Publications, 1990), 3.

APPENDIX 2: LUCIFER'S FALL

Light was removed. (verse 23)

God removed Earth's light. Not just its natural light. But Light Himself. God is Light (1 John 1:5). God removed Himself from having to do with the earth.

For a long time, a big question among scientists was "What happened to the dinosaurs?" A wide range of theories—some quite funny—were put forth. But recently many scientists have agreed on a theory that the last of the dinosaurs died on one cataclysmic day. They believe that a widespread mass extinction of animal life occurred when an asteroid collided with earth. Possibly they are coming closer to the truth.

Life was nowhere to be found. Even the birds were gone. (verse 25)

Of course, when God removed the Light of Life every creature died in an instant.

Mountains and hills shook. (v. 24)

I've wondered if this could have been when fault lines first occurred.

All the cities were destroyed. (v.26)

All—not some. Evidently "the world that then was" had cities. Via God's supernatural system which far surpasses technology of today, the prophet watched a "replay" of their violent destruction.

And what, are we told, caused such total devastation?

The Presence of the LORD, by His fierce anger. (v. 26)

"The Presence of the Lord is as destructive of evil, as it is creative of good."
—John G. Lake

What Made God So Angry?

A Rebellion so great it split the angelic hosts. A revolt against God led by the most beautiful being God had created, the Archangel, Lucifer. The following passage describes him in the beauty of his creation.

Ezekiel 28:12-15 KJV

Ezek. 28:12 Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus, and say unto him, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty.

Ezek. 28:13 Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created.

Ezek. 28:14 Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire.

APPENDIX 2: LUCIFER'S FALL

Ezek. 28:15 Thou *wast* perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee.

Where Did The Iniquity Originate?

To meet the criteria for God's handiwork—perfect and glorious—the beings He designed to work with Him must contain a certain “thing.” That “thing” is dangerous to the Creator. But His created beings would be nothing more than puppets without it. *That “thing” is a free will.*

God is not a Creator of Pinocchios, or even of marvelous-looking humanoid-like creatures programmed by microchips to worship and obey Him without fail. Indeed worship is only meaningful when the worshipper wills to worship. Obedience can bring God pleasure only when the “obeyer” chooses to obey.

One's will is his “chooser.” With it he makes the choices which determine his eternal destiny.

God gave Lucifer—as He gave to all the angels—a free will in the day of his creation. He must have used it to worship and please God for some measure of Eternity. How long the Bible does not reveal. But it does reveal that he was the first to turn his will against the Father's will and it caused his fall.

How did he fall? How did it happen? The following passage begins with those questions apparently asked by the kings of nations whom Satan deceived (Isaiah 14:9,10). And it supplies the answer.

Isaiah 14:12–14 KJV

Is. 14:12 How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! *how* art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!

Is. 14:13 For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north:

Is. 14:14 I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High.

Lucifer's five treasonous “I wills” reveal much.

“I will ascend into heaven.”

His kingdom, his domain, was in a place from which he had to ascend (go up) to carry out his rebellious plan.

“I will exalt my throne above the stars of God.”

Lucifer had a throne, and therefore a kingdom.

APPENDIX 2: LUCIFER'S FALL

“I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north.”

This describes the place of God's throne. Lucifer was after the throne of God.

“I will ascend above the heights of the clouds.”

The atmosphere of Lucifer's kingdom included clouds—clouds he would surmount in an attempt to exalt his throne. Many Bible scholars agree that his kingdom was here on earth. It was “the world that then was.”

“I will be like The Most High.”

We do not know all that this entails. But his later temptation of Jesus reveals he wanted to receive rather than to give worship. And from observation of the earthly powers and religions he deceives, his plan includes ruling the world.

There was a real “star wars!”

Lucifer deceived even some of the angels and led an organized revolt against The Most High God.

What was the outcome?

Jesus told us. “And He said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven” (Luke 10:18).

I believe Lucifer's rebellion so angered God that He removed Himself from the environs of earth sending it into a chaotic wasteland covered with dark waters.

And God's judgment of this rebellion is when what the N.T. Greek refers to as the *katabole* of the cosmos (world). It's meaning is *casting down* or *overthrow*. However it is often translated in the King James “the foundation of the world.” See The Companion Bible Appendix 146.

“The disruption of the world” is an event forming a great dividing line in the dispensation of ages. In Genesis 1:1 we have the founding of the world, but in Genesis 1:2, we have its overthrow.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

Lesson Appendix 3**TONGUES/INTERPRETATION
THROUGH KENNETH E. HAGIN**

For thus saith the Lord, "Follow my Spirit and let your words be seasoned with wisdom. And so thou shalt walk in a new dimension of prayer.

Yea, I'll take thee deeper than you've ever gone before. Even in the realm of the prayer. Oh, no, not out into some mystical realm where you'll float around like a cloud in the sky and nobody will know what's happening, but into a dimension of power, into a dimension of reality where you'll stand still and see the salvation of the Lord with you and plead your case and plead your rights.

And I'll commune with thee. And will direct your spirit. And you will know just exactly what I'm saying unto you. And I'll lead you into praying in My Spirit where you'll pray at another time with another tongue.

And often time in praying in various tongues, you'll be praying for people on various parts of the earth who speak that language. And though you do not understand it or know it blessing shall come unto them. Power shall be released unto them.

Yea, saith the Lord of hosts, Let not man ruin the move of God by his wrong thinking, selfish feelings, and childlike maneuvers. But rather let him assert himself, and submit himself to walk in the light of the Word.

And always remember; submit unto authority. And My authority is the greatest authority of all. And My authority shall be delegated unto you. And you shall exert authority upon the Earth. And great shall be the rejoicing thereof.

Yea, saith the Lord of hosts, A knowledge that has not been known before, a realm that has not been attained unto before, a dimension that has not been entered into before (Oh, occasionally just in the edge of it), shall be entered into by those who desire to enter into the prayer fight.

They will not endeavor to attract attention unto themselves. Anytime you attract attention unto yourself, you attract attention away from Me, saith the Lord.

And so humble yourself and call upon Me and say, "Oh Lord, may no one see me, but may they see You. But make me an instrument in Your hand that You can use."

And so it will be good with thee. And so it will be well with thee. And so the work of God shall be consummated and the will of God accomplished upon the earth.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

Lesson Appendix 4**WORD OF WISDOM:
WORD OF KNOWLEDGE OF WHAT
THE HOLY SPIRIT IS DOING**

Kenneth Hagin Prayer Seminar 1983 April 28

But here's what the Holy Ghost -- do you want to know what the Holy Ghost is saying? I'll tell you what the Holy Ghost is saying.

In this move, in this move, in this move that is about to come, and even you're in the edge of it right now. It will not be altogether something new that you've never seen. It'll be a combination of everything you've seen put together and then plus a little bit more.

In this move of God that is just about to spring upon you, there will be a manifestation of casting out demons that you haven't seen yet.

Now some have drawn back from casting out demons. And the Spirit of God said, "I began a move along that line a few years ago, and men aborted the move. They mixed some of their own thinking in on it, and they tried to control it and do it according to pattern and according to the way that we think it ought to be done."

But you haven't seen anything yet of what you're going to see in dealing with demons. For demons are let loose upon the earth. They're going about as never before because they know their time is short!

And so, in this multiplication, this advance of demon activity there will be the activity of the Holy Ghost. Demons that have harassed men, demons that have held ministries in check [hallelujah] will leave.

And you have not seen yet what you will see in the area of dealing with demons, casting out demons, exercising authority over demons. And we're about to step into it, like you'd step through a door into another room.

And secondly, saith the Spirit of God, "You have not seen the revival of divine healing that you're about to see."

Oh yes you saw those that I raised up. You've seen men and women, mightily used of My Spirit. I sent them forth as a pilot program to try to train you. But many just looked at them and lifted them up, and some of them were lifted up in pride, and the anointing left them. And some became money-minded and lost the anointing.

But there will arise a group in this day that's a brand-new breed. They'll not be greedy of filthy lucre. They'll not be wanting to attract attention unto themselves. They would care less whether God uses me. They'd rather God would use you.

APPENDIX 4: WORD OF WISDOM/KNOWLEDGE OF WHAT HS IS DOING

And God will not just use ministers; He'll use laymen. And there'll be a revival of divine healing such as you have not seen in your lifetime, or read about, or heard about, saith the Lord!

And a revival of the supernatural, not only the supernatural in casting out devils. Not only the supernatural in healing the sick. Not only the supernatural in speaking with other tongues. But the supernatural in the realm of the seen realm.

Men will see the glory of God; a cloud will hang over certain congregations, even the church building for days at the time. And everybody that passes by, sinner and saint alike, will say, "Well, what in the world is that? I've never seen anything like that."

And there will be in other places, there will be in other places fire of the Spirit that will actually become literal. Oh, yes, in the spirit realm, some of us have seen it. In the spirit realm, we've been conscious of the fire of God. But the fire will actually come into manifestation. And there'll be people, sinners as well as saints, that will see fire all over the heads of the people.

There'll be people driving down the street or down the highway and they'll see fire on top of the buildings. And they'll come and say, "What does all this mean?"

But, you see, the Lord will use signs of His presence to bring people, in the last days, into the fullness of His Spirit, and into full salvation.

And signs, signs! What kinds of signs?

Miraculous things in the realm of the Spirit! And then they'll be manifested in the realm of the physical. And the glory of God will fall. And the power of God will be in manifestation. And men will—and women too—will even be transported like Philip was and found in another place.

And great! GREAT! GREAT! Shall be the reward thereof. For the Lord God is the same God today as He was yesterday. His power has not diminished. And His Name is still the same.

Today He can make the iron axe-head to float. Today He can divide the river just for two men to cross over on the other side. Today He can feed five thousand with a little boy's lunch.

He is the miracle-working God. Brag on Him! Lift Him up! Draw attention unto Him! Tell about how great He is. Get up in faith and tell what great things He's going to do.

And He'll move and keep His Word with you!

And many shall be astonished.

But the greatest miracle of all is that there'll be so many fish caught in the net that the nets can't hold them. There won't be church houses enough to hold the people. Amen, Amen. For the purpose of it all is that you may be fishers of men.

Hallelujah!

Quit fishing Hallelujah!

APPENDIX 4: WORD OF WISDOM/KNOWLEDGE OF WHAT HS IS DOING

Quit fishing in your own bathtub. There's not any fish in your own bathtub. Go out where the fishes are and throw out the net. Not the hook. The NET! And pull it in. Hallelujah. And bring them in.

And the glory of the Lord shall shine. And the end time shall come. And you'll stand in the place. Yes, many of you that stand here including myself, will stand in the place of ministry that you've not stood in before.

And will stand in the place that's been ordained for you from the foundation of the earth! Hallelujah. Hallelujah.

And if it could be told you. If we were able to tell you in human language that which will transpire in some of your lives—and some of our lives who are here just now—your mind would not be able to comprehend it. As you say speaking in the human vernacular, it would almost blow your mind.

But you'll see it! You'll rejoice in it! You'll be glad of it!

It's out there, just a little ways in front of you. Be faithful, be joyous, and rejoice in the Lord always. And He'll bring it to pass.

I may not understand it with my mind. Even if it was told me I might not be able to comprehend it. But I believe it! I believe it!

I commit myself to be one that will be used of God. I go on record tonight. I'll pay the price. I'll make the sacrifice. I'll deny the flesh. I'll walk in the spirit. I'll be one who'll walk in the flow of God and do the will of God. And the work of God.

I will give myself to prayer. I will give myself to the Spirit of God. If He calls on me in the nighttime, I'll be on my knees praying. If I'm never seen of man and am always just behind the scenes, I'll be faithful.

The will of God will be done. The work of God shall be accomplished.

Many shall go and tell the story, and His great glory show. The power of God in manifestation shall be the gifts of the Spirit, the manifestation of His Spirit. Into full potential shall come the ministry gifts, the apostle and prophet, the evangelist, and pastor and teacher too, shall flow as one, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha.

And we as one, one body, in one Spirit, hallelujah, shall go forth to conqueror and to do His deeds. Arid great shall be the reward thereof.

Glory to God. Glory to God. Did you hear me? Did you hear me? Praise His holy Name. But you see moving into that place of ministry or whatever it is, whether it's full-time ministry, or pulpit ministry, or personal ministry. or whatever your place is in the Body of Christ. Moving into that place is fueled by prayer, fired by the Spirit, and ignited with His glory.

Hallelujah to Jesus. Glory to God. I said, "Glory to God." Glory to God. Glory to God. Hallelujah. Hallelujah, Praise God.

APPENDIX 4: WORD OF WISDOM/KNOWLEDGE OF WHAT HS IS DOING

But you see, if there's no fuel there, there's nothing to ignite. Notice the Spirit said (I never thought of it coming out of the inside of me), fueled by prayer, fired by the Spirit, ignited with His glory.

You have to stop and analyze that, there's a difference between firing, igniting. Yes. You see It's like the furnace, you see? There's a pilot light there that fires the thing. And then, when the whole thing has become ignited, then the heat flows out. Ha, ha, ha, can you see what He's saying?

Fueled by prayer, fired by the Spirit, ignited with His glory. Hallelujah.

I never thought of that. I mean, it just flowed up out of my Spirit.

But you see, if there's no fuel, there there's nothing to fire. If there's no fuel, there there's nothing to fire. Fueled by prayer.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

APPENDIX 5: TOMMY HICKS' END-TIMES VISION

Lesson Appendix 5**TOMMY HICKS' END-TIMES VISION**

25 JULY 1961

<https://kcm.org.za/prophecies/tommy-hicks-end-times-vision/>

The following is a stunning vision given to American preacher Tommy Hicks (who was a major figure in the powerful 1954 Argentina Revival).

VISION OF THE BODY OF CHRIST AND THE END-TIME MINISTRIES

My message begins July 25, about 2:30 in the morning at Winnipeg, Canada. I had hardly fallen asleep when the vision and the revelation that God gave me came before me. The vision came three times, exactly in detail, the morning of July 25, 1961. I was so stirred and so moved by the revelation that this has changed my complete outlook upon the Body of Christ, and upon the end-time ministries.

The greatest thing that the church of Jesus Christ has ever been given lies straight ahead. It is so hard to help men and women to realize and understand the thing that God is trying to give His people in the end times.

I received a letter several weeks ago from one of our native evangelists down in Africa, down in Nairobi. This man and his wife were on their way to Tanganyika. They could neither read nor could they write, but we had been supporting them for over two years. As they entered into the territory of Tanganyika, they came across a small village. The entire village was evacuating because of a plague that had hit the village. He came across natives that were weeping, and he asked them what was wrong.

They told him of their mother and father who had suddenly died, and they had been dead for three days. They had to leave. They were afraid to go in; they were leaving them in the cottage. He turned and asked them where they were. They pointed to the hut, and he asked them to go with him, but they refused. They were afraid to go.

The native and his wife went to this little cottage and entered in where the man and woman had been dead for three days. He simply stretched forth his hand in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and spoke the man's name and the woman's name and said, "In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, I command life to come back to your bodies." Instantaneously, these two heathen people who had never known Jesus Christ as their Savior sat up and immediately began to praise God. The spirit and the power of God came into the life of those people.

To us that may seem strange and a phenomenon, but that is the beginning of these end-time ministries. God is going to take the do-nothings, the nobodies, the unheard-of, the no-accounts. He is going to take every man and every woman, and He is going to give to them this outpouring of the Spirit of God.

APPENDIX 5: TOMMY HICKS' END-TIMES VISION

In the Book of Acts we read that "In the last days," God said, "I will pour out my Spirit upon all flesh." I wonder if we realized what He meant when God said, "I will pour out my Spirit upon all flesh." I do not think I fully realized, nor could I understand the fullness of it, and then I read from the Book of Joel: "Be glad then, ye children of Zion, and rejoice in the Lord your God: for he hath given you the former rain moderately, and he will cause to come down for you the rain, the former rain, and the latter rain" (Joel 2:23). It is not only going to be the rain, the former rain and the latter rain, but He is going to give to His people in these last days a double portion of the power of God!

As the vision appeared to me after I was asleep, I suddenly found myself in a great high distance. Where I was, I do not know. But I was looking down upon the Earth. Suddenly the whole Earth came into my view. Every nation, every kindred, every tongue came before my sight from the east and the west, the north and the south. I recognized every country and many cities that I had been in, and I was almost in fear and trembling as I beheld the great sight before me: and at that moment when the world came into view, it began to lightning and thunder.

As the lightning flashed over the face of the Earth, my eyes went downward, and I was facing the north. Suddenly, I beheld what looked like a great giant, and as I stared and looked at it, I was almost bewildered by the sight. It was so gigantic and so great. His feet seemed to reach to the North Pole and his head to the South. Its arms were stretched from sea to sea. I could not even begin to understand whether this be a mountain or this be a giant, but as I watched, I suddenly beheld a great giant. I could see his head was struggling for life. He wanted to live, but his body was covered with debris from head to foot, and at times this great giant would move his body and act as though it would even raise up at times. And when it did, thousands of little creatures seemed to run away. Hideous creatures would run away from this giant, and when he would become calm, they would come back.

All of a sudden, this great giant lifted his hand towards Heaven, and then it lifted its other hand, and when it did these creatures by the thousands seemed to flee away from this giant and go into the darkness of the night.

Slowly this great giant began to rise and as he did, his head and hands went into the clouds. As he rose to his feet, he seemed to have cleansed himself from the debris and filth that was upon him, and he began to raise his hands into the heavens as though praising the Lord, and as he raised his hands, they went even unto the clouds.

Suddenly, every cloud became silver, the most beautiful silver I have ever known. As I watched this phenomenon, it was so great I could not even begin to understand what it all meant. I was so stirred as I watched it, and I cried unto the Lord and I said, "Oh Lord, what is the meaning of this?" And I felt as if I was actually in the Spirit, and I could feel the presence of the Lord even as I was asleep.

And from those clouds suddenly there came great drops of liquid light raining down upon this mighty giant, and slowly, slowly, this giant began to melt, began to sink itself in the very earth itself, and as he melted, his whole form seemed to have melted upon the face of the Earth, and this great rain began to come down. Liquid

APPENDIX 5: TOMMY HICKS' END-TIMES VISION

drops of light began to flood the very Earth itself and as I watched this giant that seemed to melt, suddenly it became millions of people over the face of the Earth. As I beheld the sight before me, people stood up all over the world! They were lifting their hands and they were praising the Lord.

At that very moment there came a great thunder that seemed to roar from the heavens. I turned my eyes toward the heavens and suddenly I saw a figure in white, in glistening white—the most glorious thing that I have ever seen in my entire life. I did not see the face, but somehow, I knew it was the Lord Jesus Christ, and He stretched forth His hand, and as He did, He would stretch it forth to one, and to another, and to another. And as He stretched forth His hand upon the nations and the people of the world—men and women—as He pointed toward them, this liquid light seemed to flow from His hands into them, and a mighty anointing of God came upon them, and those people began to go forth in the name of the Lord.

I do not know how long I watched it. It seemed it went into days and weeks and months. And I beheld this Christ as He continued to stretch forth His hand; but there was a tragedy. There were many people, as He stretched forth His hand, that refused the anointing of God and the call of God. I saw men and women that I knew. People that I felt would certainly receive the call of God. But as He stretched forth His hand toward this one and toward that one, they simply bowed their head and began to back away. And each of those that seemed to bow down and back away, seemed to go into darkness. Blackness seemed to swallow them everywhere.

I was bewildered as I watched it, but these people that He had anointed, hundreds of thousands of people all over the world—in Africa, England, Russia, China, America, all over the world—the anointing of God was upon these people as they went forward in the name of the Lord. I saw these men and women as they went forth. They were ditch diggers, they were washerwomen, they were rich men, they were poor men. I saw people who were bound with paralysis and sickness and blindness and deafness. As the Lord stretched forth to give them this anointing, they became well, they became healed, and they went forth!

And this is the miracle of it—this is the glorious miracle of it—those people would stretch forth their hands exactly as the Lord did, and it seemed as if there was this same liquid fire in their hands. As they stretched forth their hands they said, “According to my word, be thou made whole.”

As these people continued in this mighty end-time ministry, I did not fully realize what it was, and I looked to the Lord and said, “What is the meaning of this?” And He said, “This is that which I will do in the last days. I will restore all that the cankerworm, the palmerworm, the caterpillar—will restore all that they have destroyed. This, My people, in the end times will go forth. As a mighty army shall they sweep over the face of the Earth.”

As I was at this great height, I could behold the whole world. I watched these people as they were going to and fro over the face of the Earth. Suddenly there was a man in Africa, and in a moment, He was transported by the Spirit of God, and perhaps He was in Russia or China or America or some other place, and vice versa. All over the

APPENDIX 5: TOMMY HICKS' END-TIMES VISION

world these people went, and they came through fire and through pestilence and through famine. Neither fire nor persecution—nothing seemed to stop them.

Angry mobs came to them with swords and with guns. And like Jesus, they passed through the multitudes, and they could not find them, but they went forth in the name of the Lord, and everywhere they stretched forth their hands, the sick were healed, the blind eyes were opened. There was not a long prayer, and after I had reviewed the vision many times in my mind, and I thought about it many times, I realized that I never saw a church, and I never saw or heard a denomination, but these people were going in the name of the Lord of Hosts. Hallelujah!

As they marched forth in everything they did as the ministry of Christ in the end times, these people were ministering to the multitudes over the face of the Earth. Tens of thousands, even millions seemed to come to the Lord Jesus Christ as these people stood forth and gave the message of the kingdom, of the coming kingdom, in this last hour. It was so glorious, but it seems as though there were those that rebelled, and they would become angry, and they tried to attack those workers that were giving the message.

God is going to give the world a demonstration in this last hour as the world has never known. These men and women are of all walks of life. Degrees will mean nothing. I saw these workers as they were going over the face of the Earth. When one would stumble and fall, another would come and pick him up. There were no “big I” and “little you,” but every mountain was brought low, and every valley was exalted, and they seemed to have one thing in common—there was a divine love, a divine love that seemed to flow forth from these people as they worked together and as they lived together. It was the most glorious sight that I have ever known. Jesus Christ was the theme of their life. They continued and it seemed the days went by as I stood and beheld this sight. I could only cry, and sometimes I laughed. It was so wonderful as these people went throughout the face of the whole Earth, bringing forth in this last end time.

As I watched from the very Heaven itself, there were times when great deluges of this liquid light seemed to fall upon great congregations, and that congregation would lift up their hands and seemingly praise God for hours and even days as the Spirit of God came upon them. God said, “I will pour my Spirit upon all flesh,” and that is exactly this thing. And to every man and every woman that received this power and the anointing of God, the miracles of God, there was no ending to it.

We have talked about miracles. We have talked about signs and wonders, but I could not help but weep as I read again this morning, at 4 o'clock this morning, the letter from our native workers. This is only the evidence of the beginning for one man, a “do-nothing, an unheard-of,” who would go and stretch forth his hand and say, “In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, I command life to flow into your body.” I dropped to my knees and began to pray again, and I said, “Lord, I know that this time is coming soon!”

And then again, as these people were going about the face of the Earth, a great persecution seemed to come from every angle.

APPENDIX 5: TOMMY HICKS' END-TIMES VISION

Suddenly there was another great clap of thunder, that seemed to resound around the world, and I heard again the voice, the voice that seemed to speak, "Now this is my people. This is my beloved bride." And when the voice spoke, I looked upon the Earth and I could see the lakes and the mountains. The graves were opened and people from all over the world, the saints of all ages, seemed to be rising. And as they rose from the grave, suddenly all these people came from every direction. From the east and the west, from the north and the south, and they seemed to be forming again this gigantic body. As the dead in Christ seemed to be rising first, I could hardly comprehend it. It was so marvelous. It was so far beyond anything I could ever dream or think of.

But as this body suddenly began to form, and take shape again, it took shape again in the form of this mighty giant, but this time it was different. It was arrayed in the most beautiful, gorgeous white. Its garments were without spot or wrinkle as its body began to form, and the people of all ages seemed to be gathered into this body, and slowly, slowly, as it began to form up into the very heavens, suddenly from the heavens above, the Lord Jesus came, and became the Head, and I heard another clap of thunder that said, "This is my beloved bride for whom I have waited. She will come forth even tried by fire. This is she that I have loved from the beginning of time."

As I watched, my eyes suddenly turned to the far north, and I saw seemingly destruction: men and women in anguish and crying out, and buildings in destruction. Then I heard again, the fourth voice that said, "Now is My wrath being poured out upon the face of the Earth." From the ends of the whole world, the wrath of God seemed to be poured out, and it seemed that there were great vials of God's wrath being poured out upon the face of the Earth. I can remember it as though it happened a moment ago. I shook and trembled as I beheld the awful sight of seeing the cities, and whole nations going down into destruction.

I could hear the weeping and wailing. I could hear people crying. They seemed to cry as they went into caves, but the caves in the mountains opened up.

They leaped into water, but the water would not drown them. There was nothing that could destroy them. They were wanting to take their lives, but they could not.

Then again, I turned my eyes to this glorious sight, this body arrayed in beautiful white, shining garments. Slowly, slowly, it began to lift from the Earth, and as it did, I awoke. What a sight I had beheld! I had seen the end-time ministries—the last hour. Again, on July 27, at 2:30 in the morning, the same revelation, the same vision came again exactly as it did before.

My life has been changed as I realized that we are living in that end time, for all over the world God is anointing men and women with this ministry. It will not be doctrine. It will not be a churchianity. It is going to be Jesus Christ. They will give forth the word of the Lord, and are going to say, "I heard it so many times in the vision and according to my word it shall be done."

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

Lesson Appendix 6**JEANNE WILKERSON: PROPHETIC UTTERANCE**

1983 APRIL 29

Father, we just give you thanks this night. Oh, hallelujah! Praise the Lord!

The Spirit of the living God is going to portray before you all of the parts of the life of Christ. But it will be done in the supernatural, saith the Spirit of the Lord.

He will call on different individuals. It will be the most unusual production you have ever witnessed, saith the Spirit of the Lord.

You will hear singing like you've never heard. You will hear sounds that are not earthly. Hallelujah. They will be coming through human voices, but they will not be coming from the human mind.

They will be coming from another world. That world that though you do not believe that it really exists, it's the most real, the most powerful, the most majestic, the most beautiful of all worlds.

And that world is going to begin to invade this one more, and more, and more, and more. Hallelujah! Ah, ha! OOH, hallelujah.

I'm going to literally (tongues) ... I'm going to put on scenes in (tongues) a dimension that is even greater than the dimension that men speak of today the fourth dimension. Hallelujah. (tongues)

There is a seventh dimension that I'm going to make known, saith the Lord of Hosts. Hallelujah. (tongues)

You're going to see a crop that you have never seen produced. You're going to see a bumper crop in this hour, saith the Spirit of the Lord.

And the hour is upon you. You're going to thrust in the sickle and the ground is going to reap the harvest. Hallelujah. (Tongues) It is no longer going to be such hard labor in places.

Nations are going to begin to yield to Me, saith the Spirit of the Lord. Even the president of the United States will back you, saith the Lord of hosts. (tongues)

I'll tell you what the Spirit is doing up here. He is saying this: He is saying that there is a certain protocol that you're even going to have to know before you arrive in the presence of the King of kings. You see there is a protocol that goes with the entrance to any person of great dignity and power.

But God is saying, before Brother Hagin arrives in that hour when he's going to stand before the King of kings of all the universe, he is also (tongues) ... He is grooming him for standing before some dignitaries in a foreign land. Hallelujah.

And that will soon come to pass. Hallelujah. Hallelujah.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

Appendix 7**"ECSTASY"****Prophecy through Kenneth Copeland at the
1984 Southwest Believers' Convention**

My Spirit, saith the Lord.

I'm going from village to village, from city to city, from town to town. I'm going from shore to shore and from mountaintop to valley, seeking out and recruiting an army. I'm looking for those that will join with Me in forming the most powerful spiritual Armada in the history of this planet.

These are the days of My vengeance, saith God. These are the days of My vengeance to vindicate the blood.

These are the days when I will come down on darkness with all of the weight and the power that Light has to thrust.

I am ready to throw the Body of Christ into vast battle array, into the face of darkness and cripple the demons of darkness and cause them to crawl on their belly at the feet of the Body of Christ.

Once this occurs the devil will never rise to his feet again until after the Catching Away of the Church. I AM and I Will. I have said it and I will accomplish it, saith the Lord. **I will have a Glorious Church and the gates and the authority of hell will not prevail against it.** It will not prevail against it!

I'm calling people from every walk of life. I'm calling on people to do things that I've not called on people to do before.

Do you not remember in My Word where I said to the man, Ananias, that I sent to pray and to minister to Paul, "I have shown this man what he must suffer for My Name's sake"? I have never asked anybody to go to war without knowing the price of the conflict. And he agreed.

And together, we established the fact that the New Covenant would work for Gentile or Jew in the face of darkness, and that it would stand, and having done all, the Covenant would stand against all that would come against it.

I AM THE GREAT I AM, saith the Lord. My day and My hour have come. When My day and My hour came to be baptized in water, no man could stop me. When My hour came to be born in a manger, no devil could stop Me. When My hour came, Herod and all of his troops could not stop what was happening in the earth!

It is no different now! I have chosen this hour and I have chosen this generation to be the generation that shall stand in great light and in great power! And while the devil creates a whirlwind here and a whirlwind there, and a storm here and a storm

APPENDIX 7: KENNETH COPELAND—"ECSTASY" PROPHECY

there, they will not have any impact, nor any effect on My plan and what I am doing with this army that I am building.

There's a number in this army that have been training for years. A number of you that have been training and you have been involved in small skirmishes here and there and the other place. And some of you feel as though you are battle-scarred veterans!

Oh, Oh, Oh, you have no concept of the victory that is in store for you. You have in your wildest dream no concept of what I'm going to allow to come to you in victory over darkness and over sin and over sickness and over demons and over fear. As in the days of My earthly ministry when there were men that came back to me and said, "Lord, even the devils are subject to us in Your Name!"

I said, "Rejoice for your names are written in the Lamb's Book of Life."

Even the great things that they saw will only be child's play compared to the miraculous that shall occur in these days and have even already begun and is in its light stages now! Don't look and say, "Oh, it's gonna happen one of these days." It's already happening. I'm uncovering revelation after revelation.

I promised you that it would all be uncovered by the time this is done. And I'm uncovering it on the left hand and I'm uncovering it on the right. I'm uncovering on the front and I'm uncovering it in the rear. I am uncovering the glories of My Kingdom and I haven't even begun to give revelation in this hour.

All of you that are operating on the highest level of spiritual revelation in this hour are still relatively ignorant compared to what is left for you to gain! And within very few days, you will turn and look back and you will say, "How small and insignificant was the knowledge that we had in that hour! How did we ever get by on knowing so little?"

For these are the days of the greatest revelations of all. In the future, out in the distant ages that you know nothing of, I'll give you a glimpse of what it shall be like. Never again, never in any age, never in the future again will there be the likes of you.

You will walk the streets of the cities of the planets, and the stars. I built the universe for you and you'll travel it with Me.

And all of those that shall be born in the future and all of the years to come, as natural men and natural women populate the stars. And they'll say to one another, "There comes one of the kings. There comes one of the special ones. There comes the image of the Master.

Oh! Would that we had lived in that age. They are so special. They get the best of everything. Their Father keeps them in His bosom. Oh, we have it blessed, and we have it good, but it's because of them.

They walk in the Glory Realm.

They walk in the Light Realm.

We have joy. They have ecstasy!"

APPENDIX 7: KENNETH COPELAND—"ECSTASY" PROPHECY

Never, never will there be any more like you! You fought and stood with Me. We have come through this thing together as co-laborers, and you stood and believed when you could not see. And you stood and believed when all of the forces of evil were against you.

You stand at mid-life, at 40, 50, 60 years old and face an enemy that's thousands of years old and you face him in faith, and you face him in power! And you face him without turning and I will never forget it, saith the Lord, throughout the time that Eternity shall roll.

You've been pitted against the most evil system that has ever existed in the history of all existence, and where others have failed, you have stood. I'll never forget it as long as Eternity rolls.

And the down payment on My eternal memory, the down payment on My appreciation, the down payment on what I am to do through the ages is going to be expressed to you in the most powerful healing—the most healing revival that's ever hit the earth.

And it's your hands, I'm gonna use, and it's your mouth I'm gonna use, and it's your feet I'm gonna use. It's your money I'm gonna use. It's your family I'm gonna use.

And there are many of you, tonight, that have children out on the streets, and you don't even know where they are and I'm gonna go get 'em and I'm gonna bring 'em into the Kingdom. And I'm gonna baptize 'em with My Holy Ghost and I'm gonna use 'em in the greatest healing outpouring in the history of the human race!

I created the smith that blows the coals. I created the waster that destroys. And I can handle him. I have handled him before, and I'll handle him again!

And I will tell him in your very presence! You, many of you, will hear it with your audible ear and see with your eye as I move in on the scene and tell the devil in your presence, "Bow your knee!"

The time of your financial deliverance has come! I am shaking the nations! And I'm shaking the silver and gold, the jewels and all of those things that are mine that Satan has stolen and buried and hidden and kept away. I'm shaking them into the hands of My people! And I'll not be satisfied until My people are blessed double for the shame that they've been through.

These are My days, saith the Lord. These are the days of My vengeance. I'm coming down on darkness hard. But any time that I do this, I must warn you! And take heed to what my servant is telling you tonight.

When I come down on darkness, it'll be swift. It'll be hard. So don't be carrying darkness in your life when it happens.

You walk in the Light as I am in the Light. And what comes down on them hard, will lift you up.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

MINIBOOKS

God's Promises
of the Land
to **Israel**

Compiled by
Dr. Billye Brim

Unless otherwise indicated, all Scripture quotations are taken from the
American Standard Version (ASV). Public Domain.

Scripture quotations marked NASB are taken from the New American Standard Bible® (NASB),
Copyright © 1960, 1962, 1963, 1968, 1971, 1972, 1973, 1975, 1977, 1995 by The Lockman
Foundation

Used by permission. www.Lockman.org

Published by
A Glorious Church Fellowship, Inc.
aka *Billye Brim Ministries*
aka *Prayer Mountain in the Ozarks*
PO Box 40
Branson, MO 65615
(417) 336-4877
www.billyebrim.org

THE PROMISED LAND THE ETERNAL COVENANT

GENESIS

Genesis 12:1-7

¹ Now Jehovah said unto **Abram**, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, **unto the land that I will show thee:** ² and I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and be thou a blessing: ³ and I will bless them that bless thee, and him that curseth thee will I curse: and in thee shall all the families of the earth be blessed. ⁴ So Abram went, as Jehovah had spoken unto him; and Lot went with him: and Abram was seventy and five years old when he departed out of Haran. ⁵ And Abram took Sarai his wife, and Lot his brother's son, and all their substance that they had gathered, and the souls that they had gotten in Haran; and they went forth to go into the land of Canaan; and into the land of Canaan they came. ⁶ And Abram passed through the land unto the place of Shechem, unto the oak of Moreh. And the Canaanite was then in the land. ⁷ **And Jehovah appeared unto Abram, and said, Unto thy seed will I give this land:** and there builded he an altar unto Jehovah, who appeared unto him.

Genesis 13:14-15

¹⁴ And Jehovah said unto Abram, after that Lot was separated from him, Lift up now thine eyes, and look from the place where thou art, northward and southward and eastward and westward: ¹⁵ **for all the land which thou seest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed for ever.**

Genesis 13:17

Arise, walk through the land in the length of it and in the breadth of it; **for unto thee will I give it.**

Genesis 15:7-10 NASB

⁷ And He said to him, "I am the LORD who brought you out of Ur of the Chaldeans, **to give you this land to possess it.**" ⁸ He said, "O Lord GOD, how may I know that I will possess it?" ⁹ So He said to him, "Bring Me a three year old heifer, and a three year old female goat, and a three year old ram, and a turtledove, and a young pigeon." ¹⁰ Then he brought all these to Him and cut them in two, and laid each half opposite the other; but he did not cut the birds.

Genesis 15:17-21 NASB

¹⁷It came about when the sun had set, that it was very dark, and behold, there appeared a smoking oven and a flaming torch which passed between these pieces. ¹⁸On that day the Lord made a covenant with Abram, saying,

“To your descendants I have given this land, From the river of Egypt as far as the great river, the river Euphrates:

¹⁹the Kenite and the Kenizzite and the Kadmonite ²⁰and the Hittite and the Perizzite and the Rephaim ²¹and the Amorite and the Canaanite and the Girgashite and the Jebusite.”

Genesis 25:5-6

⁵And **Abraham gave all that he had unto Isaac.** ⁶But unto the sons of the concubines, that Abraham had, Abraham gave gifts; and he sent them away from Isaac his son, while he yet lived, eastward, unto the east country.

Genesis 26:1-6 NASB

¹Now there was a famine in the land, besides the previous famine that had occurred in the days of Abraham. So **Isaac** went to Gerar, [Gaza]. . . .

²The LORD appeared to him and said, "Do not go down to Egypt; stay in the land of which I shall tell you. ³**Sojourn in this land and I will be with you and bless you, for to you and to your descendants I will give all these lands, and I will establish the oath which I swore to your father Abraham.** ⁴I will multiply your descendants as the stars of heaven, and **will give your descendants all these lands;** and by your descendants all the nations of the earth shall be blessed; ⁵because Abraham obeyed Me and kept My charge, My commandments, My statutes and My laws."

⁶So Isaac lived in Gerar [Gaza].

Genesis 28:10-13 NASB

¹⁰Then Jacob departed from Beersheba and went toward Haran. ¹¹He came to a certain place and spent the night there, because the sun had set; and he took one of the stones of the place and put it under his head, and lay down in that place. ¹²He had a dream, and behold, a ladder was set on the earth with its top reaching to heaven; and behold, the angels of God were ascending and descending on it. ¹³**And behold, the LORD stood above it and said, “I am the LORD, the God of your father Abraham and the God of Isaac; the land on which you lie, I will give it to you and to your descendants.”**

EXODUS

Exodus 3:8

And **I am come down to deliver them** out of the hand of the Egyptians, and **to bring them up out of that land unto a good land and a large**, unto a land flowing with milk and honey; unto the place of the Canaanite, and the Hittite, and the Amorite, and the Perizzite, and the Hivite, and the Jebusite.

Exodus 3:17

And I have said, **I will bring you up** out of the affliction of Egypt unto the land of the Canaanite, and the Hittite, and the Amorite, and the Perizzite, and the Hivite, and the Jebusite, **unto a land flowing with milk and honey**.

Exodus 6:2-4

² And God spake unto Moses, and said unto him, I am Jehovah: ³ and I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, as God Almighty; but by my name Jehovah I was not known to them. ⁴ And **I have also established my covenant with them, to give them the land of Canaan, the land of their sojournings, wherein they sojourned**.

Exodus 6:6-8 NASB

⁶ "Say, therefore, to the sons of Israel, 'I am the LORD, and I will bring you out from under the burdens of the Egyptians.... ⁷ Then I will take you for My people, and I will be your God; and you shall know that I am the LORD your God, who brought you out from under the burdens of the Egyptians. ⁸ **I will bring you to the land which I swore to give to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and I will give it to you for a possession; I am the LORD.**"

Exodus 13:3, 5

³ And Moses said unto **the people**, Remember this day, in which ye came out from Egypt, out of the house of bondage; for by strength of hand Jehovah brought you out from this place: there shall no leavened bread be eaten.

⁵ And it shall be, when Jehovah **shall bring thee into the land** of the Canaanite, and the Hittite, and the Amorite, and the Hivite, and the Jebusite, **which he sware unto thy fathers to give thee**, a land flowing with milk and honey, that thou shalt keep this service in this month.

Exodus 13:11

And it shall be, when Jehovah shall bring thee into the land of the Canaanite, **as he sware** unto thee and to thy fathers, and shall give it thee.

Exodus 20:12

Honor thy father and thy mother, that thy days may be long **in the land which Jehovah thy God giveth thee.**

Exodus 23:23 NASB

For My angel will go before you and **bring you in to the land** of the Amorites, the Hittites, the Perizzites, the Canaanites, the Hivites and the Jebusites; and I will completely destroy them.

Exodus 23:30-31 NASB

"I will drive them out before you little by little, until you become fruitful **and take possession of the land. I will fix your boundary** from the Red Sea to the sea of the Philistines, and from the wilderness to the River *Euphrates*; for I will deliver the inhabitants of the land into your hand, and you will drive them out before you."

Exodus 23:33

They shall not dwell in **thy land**, lest they make thee sin against me; for *if* thou serve their gods, it will surely be a snare unto thee.

Exodus 32:11, 13

¹¹ And Moses besought Jehovah his God, and said.... ¹³ Remember Abraham, Isaac, and Israel, thy servants, **to whom thou swarest by thine own self, and saidst unto them**, I will multiply your seed as the stars of heaven, **and all this land that I have spoken of will I give unto your seed, and they shall inherit it for ever.**

Exodus 33:1 NASB

Then the LORD spoke to Moses, "Depart, go up from here, you and the people whom you have brought up from the land of Egypt, **to the land of which I swore to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, saying, 'To your descendants I will give it.'**"

LEVITICUS

Leviticus 14:34

When ye are come into **the land of Canaan, which I give to you for a possession....**

Leviticus 20:24 NASB

Hence I have said to you, **"You are to possess their land, and I Myself will give it to you to possess it**, a land flowing with milk and honey." I am the LORD your God, who has separated you from the peoples.

Leviticus 25:2

Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, When ye come **into the land which I give you**, then shall the land keep a sabbath unto Jehovah.

Leviticus 25:23 NASB

The land, moreover, shall not be sold permanently, **for the land is Mine**; for you are but aliens and sojourners with Me.

Leviticus 25:38

I am Jehovah your God, **who brought you forth out of the land of Egypt, to give you the land of Canaan**, and to be your God.

Leviticus 26:42

Then will I remember my covenant with Jacob; and also my covenant with Isaac, and also my covenant with Abraham will I remember; and I will remember the land.

Leviticus 26:44-45

⁴⁴ And yet for all that, when they are in the land of their enemies, **I will not reject them**, neither will I abhor them, to destroy them utterly, and to break my covenant with them; for I am Jehovah their God; ⁴⁵ **but I will for their sakes remember the covenant of their ancestors**, whom I brought forth out of the land of Egypt in the sight of the nations, that I might be their God: I am Jehovah.

NUMBERS

Numbers 13:2 NASB

Send out for yourself men so that they may **spy out the land of Canaan, which I am going to give to the sons of Israel**; you shall send a man from each of their fathers' tribes, every one a leader among them.

Numbers 14:23-24

²³ Surely they shall not see **the land which I swear unto their fathers**, neither shall any of them that despised me see it: ²⁴ but my servant Caleb, because he had another spirit with him, and hath followed me fully, **him will I bring into the land** whereinto he went; and **his seed shall possess it**.

Numbers 14:30-31

³⁰ Surely ye shall not come into **the land, concerning which I swear that I would make you dwell therein**, save Caleb the son of Jephunneh, and Joshua the son of Nun. ³¹ But your little ones, that ye said should be a prey, **them will I bring in, and they shall know the land** which ye have rejected.

Numbers 15:2

Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, **When ye are come into the land of your habitations, which I give unto you.**

Numbers 26:53

Unto these **the land shall be divided for an inheritance** according to the number of names.

Numbers 26:55 NASB

But the land shall be divided by lot. **They shall receive their inheritance** according to the names of the tribes of their fathers.

Numbers 27:12

And Jehovah said unto Moses, Get thee up into this mountain of Abarim, and behold **the land which I have given unto the children of Israel.**

Numbers 32:11

Surely none of the men that came up out of Egypt, from twenty years old and upward, shall see **the land which I swear unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob;** because they have not wholly followed me.

Numbers 33:51

Speak unto **the children of Israel**, and say unto them, When ye pass over the Jordan into the land of Canaan,

Numbers 33:53-54

⁵³ And ye shall take possession of the land, and dwell therein; **for unto you have I given the land to possess it.** ⁵⁴ And ye shall inherit the land by lot according to your families.

Numbers 34:2

Command the children of Israel, and say unto them, When ye come into **the land of Canaan (this is the land that shall fall unto you for an inheritance,** even the land of Canaan according to the borders thereof).

Numbers 34:12-13

¹² And the border shall go down to the Jordan, and the goings out thereof shall be at the Salt Sea. **This shall be your land according to the borders thereof round about.**

¹³ And Moses commanded the children of Israel, saying, **This is the land which ye shall inherit by lot.**

Numbers 34:17

These are the names of the men that shall **divide the land unto you for inheritance**: Eleazar the priest, and Joshua the son of Nun.

Numbers 34:29 NASB

These are those whom the LORD commanded to **apportion the inheritance to the sons of Israel in the land of Canaan**.

DEUTERONOMY

Deuteronomy 1:8

Behold, I have set the land before you: **go in and possess the land which Jehovah sware unto your fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give unto them and to their seed after them**.

Deuteronomy 1:21

Behold, Jehovah thy God hath set the land before thee: go up, **take possession, as Jehovah, the God of thy fathers, hath spoken unto thee**.

Deuteronomy 1:35-36

³⁵ Surely there shall not one of these men of this evil generation see **the good land, which I sware to give unto your fathers**, ³⁶ save Caleb the son of Jephunneh; he shall see it; and **to him will I give the land that he hath trodden upon**, and to his children, because he hath wholly followed Jehovah.

Deuteronomy 2:31 NASB

The LORD said to me, "See, **I have begun to deliver Sihon and his land over to you**. Begin to occupy, that you may **possess his land**."

Deuteronomy 3:18

And I commanded you at that time, saying, **Jehovah your God hath given you this land to possess it**: ye shall pass over armed before your brethren the children of Israel, all the men of valor.

Deuteronomy 3:20

Until Jehovah give rest unto your brethren, as unto you, and **they also possess the land which Jehovah your God giveth them beyond the Jordan**: then shall ye return every man **unto his possession, which I have given you**.

Deuteronomy 3:28

But charge **Joshua**, and encourage him, and strengthen him; for he shall go over before this people, and **he shall cause them to inherit the land which thou shalt see.**

Deuteronomy 4:1

And now, O **Israel**, hearken unto the statutes and unto the ordinances, which I teach you, to do them; that ye may live, and **go in and possess the land which Jehovah, the God of your fathers, giveth you.**

Deuteronomy 4:5

Behold, I have taught you statutes and ordinances, even as Jehovah my God commanded me, that ye should do so **in the midst of the land whither ye go in to possess it.**

Deuteronomy 4:14

And Jehovah commanded me at that time to teach you statutes and ordinances, that ye might do them **in the land whither ye go over to possess it.**

Deuteronomy 4:21

Furthermore Jehovah was angry with me for your sakes, and sware that I should not go over the Jordan, and that I should not go in unto **that good land, which Jehovah thy God giveth thee for an inheritance.**

Deuteronomy 4:38

To drive out nations from before thee greater and mightier than thou, to bring thee in, **to give thee their land for an inheritance,** as at this day.

Deuteronomy 4:40

And thou shalt keep his statutes, and his commandments, which I command thee this day, that it may go well with thee, and with thy children after thee, and that thou mayest prolong thy days in **the land, which Jehovah thy God giveth thee, for ever.**

Deuteronomy 6:10 NASB

Then it shall come about when the Lord your God brings you into **the land which He swore to your fathers**, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, to give you, great and splendid cities which you did not build.

Deuteronomy 6:18

And thou shalt do that which is right and good in the sight of Jehovah; that it may be well with thee, and that thou mayest **go in and possess the good land which Jehovah sware unto thy fathers.**

Deuteronomy 6:23

And he brought us out from thence, that he might bring us in, **to give us the land which he sware unto our fathers.'**

Deuteronomy 7:1

When Jehovah thy God shall bring thee into the land whither thou goest to possess it, and shall cast out many nations before thee, the Hittite, and the Gergashite, and the Amorite, and the Canaanite, and the Perizzite, and the Hivite, and the Jebusite, seven nations greater and mightier than thou.

Deuteronomy 7:13

And he will love thee, and bless thee, and multiply thee ... in the land which he sware unto thy fathers to give thee.

Deuteronomy 8:1

All the commandment which I command thee this day shall ye observe to do, that ye may live, and multiply, and go in and **possess the land which Jehovah sware unto your fathers.**

Deuteronomy 8:10

And thou shalt eat and be full, and thou shalt bless Jehovah thy God **for the good land which he hath given thee.**

Deuteronomy 9:5 NASB

It is not for your righteousness or for the uprightness of your heart that you are going to possess their land, but it is because of the wickedness of these nations that the LORD **your God is driving them out before you, in order to confirm the oath which the LORD swore to your fathers, to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob.**

Deuteronomy 9:23

And when Jehovah sent you from Kadesh-barnea, saying, **Go up and possess the land which I have given you;** then ye rebelled....

Deuteronomy 9:28

Lest the land whence thou broughtest us out say, Because Jehovah was not able to bring them into **the land which he promised unto them....**

Deuteronomy 10:11

And Jehovah said unto me, Arise, take thy journey before the people; and they shall go in and **possess the land, which I sware unto their fathers to give unto them.**

Deuteronomy 11:8-9

⁸Therefore shall ye keep all the commandment which I command thee this day, that ye may be strong, and go in and **possess the land, whither ye go over to possess it;** ⁹and that ye may prolong your days in **the land, which Jehovah sware unto your fathers to give unto them and to their seed,** a land flowing with milk and honey.

Deuteronomy 11:21

That your days may be multiplied, and the days of your children, in **the land which Jehovah sware unto your fathers to give them, as the days of the heavens above the earth.**

Deuteronomy 11:31

For you are about to cross the Jordan to go in to possess **the land which the LORD your God is giving you,** and you shall possess it and live in it.

Deuteronomy 12:1

These are the statutes and the ordinances which ye shall observe to do in **the land which Jehovah, the God of thy fathers, hath given thee to possess it, all the days that ye live upon the earth.**

Deuteronomy 12:10

But when ye go over the Jordan, and dwell in **the land which Jehovah your God causeth you to inherit....**

Deuteronomy 16:20

Justice, *and only* justice, you shall pursue, that you may live and possess **the land which the LORD your God is giving you.**

Deuteronomy 17:14

When thou art come unto the land which **Jehovah thy God giveth thee, and shalt possess it....**

Deuteronomy 18:9

When thou art come into the land which **Jehovah thy God giveth thee....**

Deuteronomy 19:1-3

¹When the LORD your God cuts off the nations, **whose land the LORD your God gives you, and you dispossess them and settle** in their cities and in their houses, ²you shall set aside three cities for yourself in the midst of **your land, which the LORD your God gives you to possess.** ³You shall prepare the roads for yourself, and divide into three parts the territory of **your land which the LORD your God will give you as a possession,** so that any manslayer may flee there.

Deuteronomy 19:14 NASB

You shall not move your neighbor's boundary mark, which the ancestors have set, **in your inheritance which you will inherit in the land that the LORD your God gives you to possess.**

Deuteronomy 21:1

If one be found slain **in the land which Jehovah thy God giveth thee to possess it**, lying in the field, and it be not known who hath smitten him.

Deuteronomy 21:23

His body shall not remain all night upon the tree, but thou shalt surely bury him the same day; for he that is hanged is accursed of God; that thou defile not **thy land which Jehovah thy God giveth thee for an inheritance.**

Deuteronomy 24:4 NASB

And you shall not bring sin on **the land which the LORD your God gives you as an inheritance.**

Deuteronomy 25:15

A perfect and just weight shalt thou have; a perfect and just measure shalt thou have: that thy days may be long **in the land which Jehovah thy God giveth thee.**

Deuteronomy 25:19

Therefore it shall be, when Jehovah thy God hath given thee rest from all thine enemies round about, **in the land which Jehovah thy God giveth thee for an inheritance to possess it**, that thou shalt blot out the remembrance of Amalek from under heaven; thou shalt not forget.

Deuteronomy 26:1-3

¹ And it shall be, **when thou art come in unto the land which Jehovah thy God giveth thee for an inheritance**, and possessest it, and dwellest therein, ² that thou shalt take of the first of all the fruit of the ground, which thou shalt bring in from **thy land that Jehovah thy God giveth thee**; and thou shalt put it in a basket, and shalt go unto the place which Jehovah thy God shall choose, to cause his name to dwell there. ³ And thou shalt come unto the priest that shall be in those days, and say unto him, I profess this day unto Jehovah thy God, that **I am come unto the land which Jehovah sware unto our fathers to give us.**

Deuteronomy 26:9-10

⁹ and **he hath brought us into this place, and hath given us this land**, a land flowing with milk and honey. ¹⁰ And now, behold, I have brought the first of the fruit of **the ground, which thou, O Jehovah, hast given me.** And thou shalt set it down before Jehovah thy God, and worship before Jehovah thy God.

Deuteronomy 26:15

Look down from thy holy habitation, from heaven, and bless thy people Israel, and **the ground which thou hast given us, as thou swarest unto our fathers.**

Deuteronomy 27:2-3

²And it shall be on the day when ye shall pass over the Jordan **unto the land which Jehovah thy God giveth thee**, that thou shalt set thee up great stones, and plaster them with plaster: ³and thou shalt write upon them all the words of this law, when thou art passed over; that thou mayest **go in unto the land which Jehovah thy God giveth thee, a land flowing with milk and honey, as Jehovah, the God of thy fathers, hath promised thee.**

Deuteronomy 28:11

And Jehovah will make thee plenteous for good, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy ground, **in the land which Jehovah sware unto thy fathers to give thee.**

Deuteronomy 28:52

And they shall besiege thee in all thy gates throughout **all thy land, which Jehovah thy God hath given thee.**

Deuteronomy 30:3-9

³then the LORD your God will restore you from captivity, and have compassion on you, and will gather you again from all the peoples where the LORD your God has scattered you. ⁴If your outcasts are at the ends of the earth, from there the LORD your God will gather you, and from there He will bring you back. ⁵**The LORD your God will bring you into the land which your fathers possessed, and you shall possess it; and He will prosper you and multiply you more than your fathers.**

⁶“Moreover the LORD your God will circumcise your heart and the heart of your descendants, to love the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul, so that you may live. ⁷The LORD your God will inflict all these curses on your enemies and on those who hate you, who persecuted you. ⁸And you shall again obey the LORD, and observe all His commandments which I command you today. ⁹Then the LORD your God will prosper you abundantly in all the work of your hand, in the offspring of your body and in the offspring of your cattle and in the produce of your ground, for the LORD will again rejoice over you for good, just as He rejoiced over your fathers.

Deuteronomy 30:20

To love Jehovah thy God, to obey his voice, and to cleave unto him; for he is thy life, and the length of thy days; that thou mayest dwell in **the land which Jehovah sware unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them.**

Deuteronomy 31:21

That this song shall testify before them as a witness; for it shall not be forgotten out of the mouths of their seed: for I know their imagination which they frame this day, **before I have brought them into the land which I swear.**

Deuteronomy 31:23

And he gave Joshua the son of Nun a charge, and said, Be strong and of good courage; for thou shalt bring the children of Israel into **the land which I swear unto them:** and I will be with thee.

Deuteronomy 32:43 NASB

Rejoice, O nations, *with* His people;
For He will avenge the blood of His servants, And will render vengeance on His adversaries,
And will atone **for His land and His people.**

Deuteronomy 32:49

Get thee up into this mountain of Abarim, unto mount Nebo, which is in the land of Moab, that is over against Jericho; and behold **the land of Canaan, which I give unto the children of Israel for a possession.**

Deuteronomy 32:52

For thou shalt see the land before thee; but thou shalt not go thither into **the land which I give the children of Israel.**

Deuteronomy 34:1-2

¹ And Moses went up from the plains of Moab unto mount Nebo, to the top of Pisgah, that is over against Jericho. And Jehovah showed him all the land of Gilead, unto Dan, ² and all Naphtali, and the land of Ephraim and Manasseh, and all the land of Judah, unto the hinder sea.

Deuteronomy 34:4

And Jehovah said unto him, **This is the land which I swear unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, saying, I will give it unto thy seed:** I have caused thee to see it with thine eyes, but thou shalt not go over thither.

JOSHUA

Joshua 1:2-4

² Moses my servant is dead; now therefore arise, go over this Jordan, thou, and all this people, **unto the land which I do give to them, even to the children of**

Israel. ³Every place that the sole of your foot shall tread upon, **to you have I given it**, as I spake unto Moses. ⁴**From the wilderness, and this Lebanon, even unto the great river, the river Euphrates, all the land of the Hittites, and unto the great sea toward the going down of the sun, shall be your border.**

Joshua 1:6

Be strong and of good courage; for thou shalt cause this people to inherit **the land which I swear unto their fathers to give them.**

Joshua 1:11

Pass through the midst of the camp, and command the people, saying, Prepare you victuals; for within three days ye are to pass over this Jordan, **to go in to possess the land, which Jehovah your God giveth you to possess it.**

Joshua 1:15 NASB

Until the LORD gives your brothers rest, as He gives you, and they also possess **the land which the LORD your God is giving them....**

Joshua 2:9

And she [Rahab] said unto the men, **I know that Jehovah hath given you the land**, and that the fear of you is fallen upon us, and that all the inhabitants of the land melt away before you.

Joshua 2:14

And the men said unto her, Our life for yours, if ye utter not this our business; and it shall be, **when Jehovah giveth us the land**, that we will deal kindly and truly with thee.

Joshua 2:24

And they said unto Joshua, Truly **Jehovah hath delivered into our hands all the land**; and moreover all the inhabitants of the land do melt away before us.

Joshua 13:1

Now Joshua was old and well stricken in years; and **Jehovah said unto him**, Thou art old and well stricken in years, and **there remaineth yet very much land to be possessed.**

Joshua 14:9 NASB

So Moses swore on that day, saying, "Surely the land on which your foot has trodden will be an inheritance to you [Caleb] and to your children forever, because you have followed the LORD my God fully."

(Brim note: This land promised to Caleb forever is now on what the world calls the West Bank.)

Joshua 18:1-3

¹ And the whole congregation of the children of Israel assembled themselves together at Shiloh, and set up the tent of meeting there: and the land was subdued before them. ² And there remained among the children of Israel seven tribes, which had not yet divided their inheritance. ³ And Joshua said unto the children of Israel, How long are ye slack to go in to **possess the land, which Jehovah, the God of your fathers, hath given you?**

Joshua 18:10

And Joshua cast lots for them in Shiloh before Jehovah: and there Joshua divided the land unto the children of Israel according to their divisions.

Joshua 19:51 NASB

These are the inheritances which Eleazar the priest, and Joshua the son of Nun, and the heads of the households of the tribes of the sons of Israel distributed by lot in Shiloh before the LORD at the doorway of the tent of meeting. So they finished dividing the land.

Joshua 21:43 NASB

So the LORD gave Israel all the land which He had sworn to give to their fathers, and they possessed it and lived in it.

Joshua 23:5

And Jehovah your God, he will thrust them out from before you, and drive them from out of your sight; **and ye shall possess their land, as Jehovah your God spake unto you.**

Joshua 24:3

And I took your father Abraham from beyond the River, and led him throughout all the land of Canaan, and multiplied his seed, and gave him Isaac.

Joshua 24:8

And I brought you into the land of the Amorites, that dwelt beyond the Jordan: and they fought with you; and **I gave them into your hand, and ye possessed their land; and I destroyed them from before you.**

Joshua 24:13 NASB

I gave you a land on which you had not labored, and cities which you had not built, and you have lived in them; you are eating of vineyards and olive groves which you did not plant.

JUDGES

Judges 2:1

And the angel of Jehovah came up from Gilgal to Bochim. And he said, I made you to go up out of Egypt, and **have brought you unto the land which I swore unto your fathers; and I said, I will never break my covenant with you.**

FIRST KINGS

1 Kings 8:22

And **Solomon** stood before the altar of Jehovah in the presence of all the assembly of Israel, and spread forth his hands toward heaven.

1 Kings 8:33-34 NASB

³³ When Your people Israel are defeated before an enemy, because they have sinned against You, if they turn to You again and confess Your name and pray and make supplication to You in this house, ³⁴ then hear in heaven, and forgive the sin of Your people Israel, and **bring them back to the land which You gave to their fathers.**

1 Kings 8:36

Then hear thou in heaven, and forgive the sin of thy servants, and of thy people Israel, when thou teachest them the good way wherein they should walk; and send rain upon **thy land, which thou hast given to thy people for an inheritance.**

1 Kings 8:40

That they may fear thee all the days that they live in **the land which thou gavest unto our fathers.**

SECOND KINGS

2 Kings 21:8 NASB

And I will not make the feet of Israel wander anymore from **the land which I gave their fathers**, if only they will observe to do according to all that I have commanded them, and according to all the law that My servant Moses commanded them.

FIRST CHRONICLES

1 Chronicles 16:13-18

- ¹³ O seed of Israel His servant,
Sons of Jacob, His chosen ones!
¹⁴ He is the Lord our God;
His judgments are in all the earth.
¹⁵ **Remember His covenant forever,**
The word which He commanded to a thousand generations,
¹⁶ **The covenant which He made with Abraham,**
And His oath to Isaac.
¹⁷ **He also confirmed it to Jacob for a statute,**
To Israel as an everlasting covenant,
¹⁸ **Saying, "To you I will give the land of Canaan,**
As the portion of your inheritance."

(Brim note: This is "The Everlasting Covenant." In part, it is because they broke "The Everlasting Covenant," that earth will know judgment. See Isaiah 24:5.)

SECOND CHRONICLES

2 Chronicles 6:25

then hear thou from heaven, and forgive the sin of thy people Israel, and **bring them again unto the land which thou gavest to them and to their fathers.**

2 Chronicles 6:27

Then hear thou in heaven, and forgive the sin of thy servants, and of thy people Israel, when thou teachest them the good way wherein they should walk; and send rain upon **thy land, which thou hast given to thy people for an inheritance.**

2 Chronicles 6:38

If they return unto thee with all their heart and with all their soul in the land of their captivity, whither they have carried them captive, and pray toward **their land, which thou gavest unto their fathers,** and the city which thou hast chosen, and toward the house which I have built for thy name.

2 Chronicles 7:20

Then will I pluck them up by the roots out of **my land which I have given them....**

2 Chronicles 33:8

Neither will I any more remove the foot of Israel from off **the land which I have appointed for your fathers**, if only they will observe to do all that I have commanded them, even all the law and the statutes and the ordinances given by Moses.

NEHEMIAH

Nehemiah 9:5 NASB

Then the Levites... said, "Arise, bless the LORD your God forever and ever!..."

Nehemiah 9:7-8 NASB

⁷"You are the Lord God,

Who chose Abram

And brought him out from Ur of the Chaldees,

And gave him the name Abraham.

⁸"You found his heart faithful before You,

And made a covenant with him

To give him the land of the Canaanite,

Of the Hittite and the Amorite,

Of the Perizzite, the Jebusite and the Gergashite—

To give it to his descendants.

And You have fulfilled Your promise,

For You are righteous.

Nehemiah 9:15 NASB

You provided bread from heaven for them for their hunger,

You brought forth water from a rock for them for their thirst,

And You told them to enter in order to possess,

The land which You swore to give them.

Nehemiah 9:36

Behold, we are servants this day, and as for **the land that thou gavest unto our fathers** to eat the fruit thereof and the good thereof, behold, we are servants in it.

PSALMS

Psalm 44:1-3 NASB

- ¹ O God, we have heard with our ears,
Our fathers have told us
The work that You did in their days,
In the days of old.
- ² You with Your own hand drove out the nations;
Then **You planted them**;
- ³ For by their own sword they did not possess **the land**,
And their own arm did not save them,
But Your right hand and Your arm and the light of Your presence,
For **You favored them**.

Psalm 105:8-11

- ⁸ **He hath remembered his covenant for ever,**
The word which he commanded to a thousand generations,
- ⁹ *The covenant which he made with Abraham,*
And his oath unto Isaac,
- ¹⁰ And confirmed the same unto Jacob for a statute,
To Israel for an everlasting covenant,
- ¹¹ **Saying, Unto thee will I give the land of Canaan,**
The lot of your inheritance.
- (Brim note: This is "The Everlasting Covenant." In part, it is because they broke "The Everlasting Covenant," that earth will know judgment. See Isaiah 24:5.)

Psalm 135:10

Who smote many nations,
And slew mighty kings.

Psalm 135:12

And gave their land for a heritage,
A heritage unto Israel his people.

Psalm 136:21-22

- ²¹ **And gave their land for a heritage;**
For his lovingkindness endureth for ever;
- ²² **Even a heritage unto Israel** his servant;
For his lovingkindness endureth for ever.

ISAIAH

Isaiah 14:1-2 NASB

¹ When the LORD will have compassion on Jacob and again choose Israel, and settle them in their own land, then strangers will join them and attach themselves to the house of Jacob. ² The peoples will take them along and bring them to their place, and the house of Israel will possess them as an inheritance in the land of the LORD as male servants and female servants; and they will take their captors captive and will rule over their oppressors.

Isaiah 49:8 NASB

Thus says the LORD,
“In a favorable time I have answered You,
And in a day of salvation I have helped You;
And I will keep You and give You for a covenant of the people,
To restore the land, to make them inherit the desolate heritages.”

Isaiah 49:12 NASB

Behold, these will come from afar;
And lo, these *will come* from the north and from the west,
And these from the land of Sinim [China].

Isaiah 60:18 NASB

Violence will not be heard again in your land,
Nor devastation or destruction within your borders;
But you will call your walls salvation, and your gates praise.”

Isaiah 60:21 NASB

Then all your people *will be* righteous;
**They will possess the land forever,
The branch of My planting,
The work of My hands,
That I may be glorified.**

Isaiah 61:4 NASB

Then they will rebuild the ancient ruins,
They will raise up the former devastations;
And they will repair the ruined cities,
The desolations of many generations.

Isaiah 61:7 NASB

Instead of your shame *you will have* a double portion,

And *instead* of humiliation they will shout for joy over their portion.
Therefore they will possess a double portion in their land,
Everlasting joy will be theirs.

JEREMIAH

Jeremiah 3:16-19 NASB

¹⁶ "It shall be in those days **when you are multiplied and increased in the land,**" declares the LORD, "they will no longer say, 'The ark of the covenant of the LORD.' And it will not come to mind, nor will they remember it, nor will they miss it, nor will it be made again. ¹⁷ "At that time they will call Jerusalem 'The Throne of the LORD,' and all the nations will be gathered to it, to Jerusalem, for the name of the LORD; nor will they walk anymore after the stubbornness of their evil heart. ¹⁸ "In those days the house of Judah will walk with the house of Israel, and they will come together from the land of the **north to the land that I gave your fathers as an inheritance.**

¹⁹ "Then I said,

'How I would set you among My sons
And give you a pleasant land,
The most beautiful inheritance of the nations!
And I said, 'You shall call Me, My Father,
And not turn away from following Me.'"

Jeremiah 11:5

That I may establish **the oath which I swear unto your fathers, to give them a land** flowing with milk and honey, as at this day. Then answered I, and said, Amen, O Jehovah.

Jeremiah 12:14 NASB

Thus says the LORD concerning all My wicked neighbors who strike at **the inheritance with which I have endowed My people Israel....**

Jeremiah 16:14-15 NASB

¹⁴ "Therefore behold, days are coming," declares the LORD, "when it will no longer be said, 'As the LORD lives, who brought up the sons of Israel out of the land of Egypt,' ¹⁵but, 'As the LORD lives, who brought up the sons of Israel from the land of the north and from all the countries where He had banished them.' For **I will restore them to their own land which I gave to their fathers.**"

Jeremiah 23:7-8 NASB

⁷ "Therefore behold, *the* days are coming," declares the LORD, "when they will no longer say, 'As the LORD lives, who brought up the sons of Israel from the land of Egypt,' ⁸but, 'As the LORD lives, who brought up and led back the descendants of the household of Israel from the north land and from all the countries where I had driven them.' Then they will live on **their own soil [land]**."

Jeremiah 24:6 NASB

For I will set My eyes on them for good, and **I will bring them again to this land**; and I will build them up and not overthrow them, and I will plant them and not pluck them up.

Jeremiah 25:5 NASB

Saying, "Turn now everyone from his evil way and from the evil of your deeds, and dwell on **the land which the LORD has given to you and your forefathers forever and ever.**"

Jeremiah 30:3 NASB

"For behold, days are coming," declares the LORD, "when I will restore the fortunes of My people Israel and Judah." The LORD says, "**I will also bring them back to the land that I gave to their forefathers and they shall possess it.**"

Jeremiah 32:22 NASB

And gave them this land, which You swore to their forefathers to give them, a land flowing with milk and honey.

Jeremiah 32:41

Yea, I will rejoice over them to do them good, and **I will plant them in this land** assuredly with my whole heart and with my whole soul.

Jeremiah 32:44 NASB

"Men will buy fields for money, sign and seal deeds, and call in witnesses in the land of Benjamin, in the environs of Jerusalem, in the cities of Judah, in the cities of the hill country, in the cities of the lowland and in the cities of the Negev; for **I will restore their fortunes,**" declares the LORD.

Jeremiah 33:11 NASB

The voice of joy and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom and the voice of the bride, the voice of those who say,

"Give thanks to the LORD of hosts,
For the LORD is good,
For His lovingkindness is everlasting;"

and of those who bring a thank offering into the house of the LORD. **For I will restore the fortunes of the land as they were at first,' says the LORD.**

EZEKIEL

Ezekiel 20:39-42 NASB

"As for you, O house of Israel," thus says the Lord GOD, "Go, serve everyone his idols; but later you will surely listen to Me, and My holy name you will profane no longer with your gifts and with your idols. For on My holy mountain, on the high mountain of Israel," declares the Lord GOD, "there the whole house of Israel [Northern and Southern Kingdoms], all of them, will serve Me in the land; there I will accept them and there I will seek your contributions and the choicest of your gifts, with all your holy things. As a soothing aroma I will accept you **when I bring you out from the peoples and gather you from the lands where you are scattered**; and I will prove Myself holy among you in the sight of the nations.

"And you will know that I am the LORD, **when I bring you into the land of Israel, into the land which I swore to give to your forefathers.**

Ezekiel 28:25 NASB

Thus says the Lord GOD, "When I gather the house of Israel from the peoples among whom they are scattered, and will manifest My holiness in them in the sight of the nations, then **they will live in their land which I gave to My servant Jacob.**

Ezekiel 34:13

And I will bring them out from the peoples, and gather them from the countries, and **will bring them into their own land**; and I will feed them upon the mountains of Israel, by the watercourses, and in all the inhabited places of the country.

(Read from Ezekiel 34:11-31.)

Ezekiel 36:6-12 NASB

⁶Therefore **prophecy concerning the land of Israel** and say to the mountains and to the hills, to the ravines and to the valleys, "Thus says the Lord GOD, 'Behold, I have spoken in My jealousy and in My wrath because you have endured the insults of the nations.'⁷ Therefore thus says the Lord GOD, 'I have sworn that surely the nations which are around you will themselves endure their insults.'⁸ But you, **O mountains of Israel**, you will put forth your branches and bear your fruit **for My people Israel; for they will soon come.**⁹ For, behold, I am for you, and I will turn to you, and you will be cultivated and sown.¹⁰ I will multiply men on you, all the house of Israel, [Northern and Southern kingdoms] all of it; and the cities will be inhabited and the waste places will be rebuilt.¹¹ I will multiply on you man and beast; and they will

3BI EPHESIANS: THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER
MINIBOOK: GOD'S PROMISES OF THE LAND TO ISRAEL

increase and be fruitful; and I will cause you to be inhabited as you were formerly and will treat you better than at the first. Thus you will know that I am the LORD. ¹²Yes, **I will cause men—My people Israel—to walk on you and possess you**, so that you will become their inheritance and never again bereave them of children.'

Ezekiel 36:24

For I will take you from among the nations, and gather you out of all the countries, and will **bring you into your own land**.

Ezekiel 36:28

And ye shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; and ye shall be my people, and I will be your God.

Ezekiel 37:3-4

³ And he said unto me, Son of man, can these bones live? And I answered, O Lord Jehovah, thou knowest. ⁴ Again he said unto me, Prophesy over these bones, and say unto them, O ye dry bones, hear the word of Jehovah.

Ezekiel 37:10-14

¹⁰ So I prophesied as he commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they lived, and stood up upon their feet, an exceeding great army.

¹¹ Then he said unto me, Son of man, **these bones are the whole house of Israel**: behold, they say, Our bones are dried up, and our hope is lost; we are clean cut off. ¹² Therefore prophesy, and say unto them, Thus saith the Lord Jehovah: Behold, I will open your graves, and cause you to come up out of your graves, **O my people; and I will bring you into the land of Israel**. ¹³ And ye shall know that I am Jehovah, when I have opened your graves, and caused you to come up out of your graves, **O my people**. ¹⁴ And I will put my Spirit in you, and ye shall live, and **I will place you in your own land**: and ye shall know that I, Jehovah, have spoken it and performed it, saith Jehovah.

Ezekiel 37:21-22

²¹ And say unto them, Thus saith the Lord Jehovah: Behold, I will take the children of Israel from among the nations, whither they are gone, **and will gather them on every side, and bring them into their own land**: ²² and **I will make them one nation in the land, upon the mountains of Israel**; and one king shall be king to them all; and they shall be no more two nations, neither shall they be divided into two kingdoms any more at all.

Ezekiel 37:25

And they shall dwell in the land that I have given unto Jacob my servant, wherein your fathers dwelt; and they shall dwell therein, they, and their

children, and their children's children, for ever: and David my servant shall be their prince for ever.

Ezekiel 39:26 NASB

They will forget their disgrace and all their treachery which they perpetrated against Me, **when they live securely on their own land** with no one to make *them* afraid.

Ezekiel 39:28

And they shall know that I am Jehovah their God, in that I caused them to go into captivity among the nations, **and have gathered them unto their own land**; and I will leave none of them any more there.

[Brim note: Millennial Division of Israel]

Ezekiel 45:1

Moreover, **when ye shall divide by lot the land for inheritance**, ye shall offer an oblation unto Jehovah, a holy portion of the land; the length shall be the length of five and twenty thousand reeds, and the breadth shall be ten thousand: it shall be holy in all the border thereof round about.

Ezekiel 47:13-14 NASB

¹³ Thus says the Lord GOD, "This *shall be* the boundary by which you shall divide the land for an inheritance among the twelve tribes of Israel; Joseph *shall have* two portions. ¹⁴ You shall divide it for an inheritance, each one equally with the other; for I swore to give it to your forefathers, and this land shall fall to you as an inheritance.

Ezekiel 47:21

So shall ye divide this land unto you according to the tribes of Israel.

Ezekiel 48:29

This is the land which ye shall divide by lot unto the tribes of Israel for inheritance, and these are their several portions, saith the Lord Jehovah.

HOSEA

Hosea 2:15 NASB

Then I will give her her vineyards from there,
And the valley of Achor as a door of hope.
And she will sing there as in the days of her youth,
As in the day when she came up from the land of Egypt.

Hosea 2:20

I will even betroth thee unto me in faithfulness; and thou shalt know Jehovah.

Hosea 2:23 NASB

I will sow her for Myself in the land.

I will also have compassion on her who had not obtained compassion,

And I will say to those who were not My people,

“You are My people!”

And they will say, “*You are my God!*”

JOEL

Joel 3:2 NASB

I will gather all the nations

And bring them down to the valley of Jehoshaphat.

Then I will enter into judgment with them there

On behalf of **My people and My inheritance, Israel,**

Whom they have scattered among the nations;

And **they have divided up My land.**

AMOS

Amos 9:14 NASB

Also I will restore the captivity of **My people Israel,**

And they will rebuild the ruined cities and live *in them*;

They will also plant vineyards and drink their wine,

And make gardens and eat their fruit.

Amos 9:15 NASB

"I will also plant them on their land,

And they will not again be rooted out from their land

Which I have given them,"

Says the LORD your God.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)

3BI EPHESIANS: THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER
MINIBOOK: JUDGMENT OF THE NATIONS FOR HOW THEY TREAT ISRAEL

Judgment

of the

Nations

for how they treat

Israel

Compiled by
Dr. Billye Brim

Published by:
A Glorious Church Fellowship, Inc.
Billye Brim Ministries
Prayer Mountain in the Ozarks
P.O. Box 40
Branson, MO 65615
(417) 336-4877
www.BillyeBrim.org

Unless otherwise indicated, all Scripture quotations are from the King James Version of the Bible.
Public Domain.

Scripture quotations marked "ASV" are taken from the American Standard Version Bible
(Public Domain).

Scripture quotations marked "AMPC" are taken from the Amplified® Bible (AMPC). Copyright ©
1954, 1958, 1962, 1964, 1965, 1987 by The Lockman Foundation.

Used by permission. www.Lockman.org

JUDGMENT OF THE NATIONS FOR HOW THEY TREAT ISRAEL

The first mention of the nations (Heb: goyim) is in Genesis 10. After the flood, the chapter lists the sons of Noah's three sons: Shem, Ham, and Yapheth. Seventy foundational nations are listed. The Lord's will for them was, "Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth" (Gen. 9:1). Under Nimrod (Gen. 10:8-11), the nations rebelled at Babel (Gen. 11). Three hundred and forty years after the flood, they had not scattered, but were bunched up on the plain of Shinar (Babylon). The Babylonian System began with this rebellion.

The LORD judged them, confused their language, and scattered them throughout the earth. In Genesis 12, He introduced His separated nation, Israel. Israel was separated *from* the nations and *unto* God with the call of *revealing God to the nations*. In God's revelation to the church regarding Israel in Romans chapters 9, 10, and 11, He avers that He does not change His mind regarding this calling. "For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance" (Rom. 11:29). Nations, as nations, are judged, therefore, as to how they treat the chosen nation with the call to reveal God to them.

Deuteronomy 32:4

He is the Rock, his work is perfect: for all his ways are judgment: a God of truth and without iniquity, just and right is he.

Quoting David Baron's book *Israel in the Plan of God*, page 36:

Another glorious characteristic of the 'Rock of Israel' is that: '*All His ways are judgment.*' This word *mish-pat* (judgment) stands in the Hebrew Bible not only for God's acts of judgment, but for His just and righteous decisions, as the Judge and Moral Governor of the Universe.

THE SCRIPTURES

Remember to rightly divide the Word to see to whom a Scripture speaks: the Jews, the Nations, or the Church. (See 2 Tim. 2:15; 1 Cor. 10:32.)

This list of Scriptures regarding the judgment of nations as nations is by no means exhaustive.

Genesis 12:1-3

Now the LORD had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and

3BI EPHESIANS: THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER
MINIBOOK: JUDGMENT OF THE NATIONS FOR HOW THEY TREAT ISRAEL

thou shalt be a blessing: And **I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee:** and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.

Isaiah 49:25-26

But thus saith the LORD, Even the captives of the mighty shall be taken away, and the prey of the terrible shall be delivered: for **I will contend with him that contendeth with thee,** and I will save thy children. And I will feed them that oppress thee with their own flesh; and they shall be drunken with their own blood, as with sweet wine: and all flesh shall know that I the LORD am thy Saviour and thy Redeemer, the mighty One of Jacob.

Brim Note:

The Scriptures often refer to the physical offspring of Abraham as Jacob. Why not Abraham or Isaac? Abraham had other sons. Isaac had another son. But all 12 of Jacob's sons constituted the nation of Israel.

Brim Note:

Most people know half the following verse, but it is important to know all of it as evidence that many nations who persecuted Israel [Jacob] are even now gone, but Jacob is still here and is back home just as God said they would be.

Malachi 3:6

For I am the LORD, I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed.

CUP OF JUDGMENT

Quoting David Baron's book, Zechariah: A Commentary on His Visions and Prophecies, page 426:

The cup of reeling, or giddiness, is frequently used in Scripture as a symbol of the judgment of God which brings man into a condition of helplessness and misery like unto that of the staggering, intoxicated man who is unable to walk.

In Isaiah 51:17, 21-23 it is used of the cup drunk by Jerusalem and Israel, and then it will be given to those who mistreated His people.

Isaiah 51:17, 21-23

Awake, awake, stand up, O Jerusalem, which hast drunk at the hand of the LORD the cup of his fury; thou hast drunken the dregs of the cup of trembling, and wrung them out.

Therefore hear now this, thou afflicted, and drunken, but not with wine: Thus saith thy Lord the LORD, and thy God that pleadeth the cause of his people, **Behold, I have taken out of thine hand the cup of trembling, even the dregs of the cup of my fury; thou shalt no more drink it again: But I will put it into the hand of them that afflict thee;** which have said to thy

3BI EPHESIANS: THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER
MINIBOOK: JUDGMENT OF THE NATIONS FOR HOW THEY TREAT ISRAEL

soul, Bow down, that we may go over: and thou hast laid thy body as the ground, and as the street, to them that went over.

Psalm 75:8

For in the hand of the LORD *there* is a cup, and the wine is red; it is full of mixture; and he poureth out of the same: but the dregs thereof, all the wicked of the earth shall wring *them* out, and drink *them*.

Baron, Zechariah, page 426

In those passages, it is the *kos* (cup) that is spoken of, but in Zechariah 12 it is the *saph*, the *bowl*, or basin of reeling; the thought expressed in this instance is that of a vessel large enough for all nations to drink out of it, either together, or one after another in succession. And they shall all drink of this intoxicating cup of God's judgment and stagger and fall, not to rise again."

Zechariah 12:1-3

The burden of the word of the LORD for Israel, saith the LORD, which stretcheth forth the heavens, and layeth the foundation of the earth, and formeth the spirit of man within him. **Behold, I will make Jerusalem a cup of trembling unto all the people round about, when they shall be in the siege both against Judah and against Jerusalem.** And in that day will I make Jerusalem a burdensome stone for all people: all that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces, though all the people of the earth be gathered together against it.

JEREMIAH

Jeremiah 10:25

Pour out thy fury upon the heathen [*goyim* = *nations*] that know thee not, and upon the families that call not on thy name: for they have eaten up Jacob, and devoured him, and consumed him, and have made his habitation desolate.

Brim Note

God's Plan A for Israel was to live in the Land He promised them—which is a land bridge between three continents, Europe, Asia, and Africa—exhibiting to caravans and armies that would march through that Jehovah is the real God. (See Deuteronomy 28:1-14, note verses 9 and 10.)

Plan B was, if they did not obey Him, they would be scattered to the four corners of the earth. Then in the end of days He would bring them back to their Promised Land and this would be **a sign to the nations**, thereby Israel would still be operating in their call, *revealing God to the nations*. [**Many** Scriptures speak of this Ingathering. For example, see Isaiah 11:10-12; Isaiah 43:1, 5-12.]

3BI EPHESIANS: THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER MINIBOOK: JUDGMENT OF THE NATIONS FOR HOW THEY TREAT ISRAEL

God's will for their treatment in the dispersion was Jeremiah 29:4-7. When the nations mistreated them, the LORD was *sore displeased*. See Zechariah 1:15. And the word translated "heathen" here is *goyim*, nations.

Jeremiah 29:4-7

Thus saith the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, unto all that are carried away captives, whom I have caused to be carried away from Jerusalem unto Babylon; Build ye houses, and dwell *in them*; and plant gardens, and eat the fruit of them; Take ye wives, and beget sons and daughters; and take wives for your sons, and give your daughters to husbands, that they may bear sons and daughters; that ye may be increased there, and not diminished. And seek the peace of the city whither I have caused you to be carried away captives, and pray unto the LORD for it: for in the peace thereof shall ye have peace.

Brim Note

I've wondered, how could the prophet Jeremiah have done what the Lord commanded in verse 15? For it involved taking the cup "*to all the kingdoms of the world, which are upon the face of the earth*"? The ancient sages say that when he spoke it, it was done.

Jeremiah 25:15-17

For thus saith the LORD God of Israel unto me; Take the wine cup of this fury at my hand, and cause all **the nations**, to whom I send thee, to drink it. And they shall drink, and be moved, and be mad, because of the sword that I will send among them. Then took I the cup at the LORD's hand, and made all **the nations** to drink, unto whom the LORD had sent me:

Jeremiah 25:26-27

And all the kings of the north, far and near, one with another, and all the kingdoms of the world, which *are* upon the face of the earth: and the king of Sheshach shall drink after them. [*Sheshach is Babylon.*] Therefore thou shalt say unto them, Thus saith the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel; Drink ye, and be drunken, and spew, and fall, and rise no more, because of the sword which I will send among you.

Jeremiah 25:31-32

A noise shall come *even* to the ends of the earth; for **the LORD hath a controversy with the nations**, he will plead with all flesh; he will give them *that are* wicked to the sword, saith the LORD. Thus saith the LORD of hosts, Behold, evil shall go forth from nation to nation, and a great whirlwind shall be raised up from the coasts of the earth.

Brim Note

Jeremiah 30 and 31 is a Book within a Book, revealing God's Plan for Israel. You should read both chapters together. Following are some select verses according to our subject.

3BI EPHESIANS: THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER
MINIBOOK: JUDGMENT OF THE NATIONS FOR HOW THEY TREAT ISRAEL

Jeremiah 30:3-4

For, lo, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will bring again the captivity of my people *Israel and Judah, saith the LORD: and I will cause them to return to the land that I gave to their fathers, and they shall possess it.

And these *are* the words that the LORD spake concerning Israel and concerning Judah.

Jeremiah 30:10-11

Therefore fear thou not, O my servant Jacob, saith the LORD; neither be dismayed, O Israel: for, lo, I will save thee from afar, and thy seed from the land of their captivity; and Jacob shall return, and shall be in rest, and be quiet, and none shall make *him* afraid. For I *am* with thee, saith the LORD, to save thee: **though I make a full end of all nations whither I have scattered thee, yet will I not make a full end of thee:** but I will correct thee in measure, and will not leave thee altogether unpunished.

Jeremiah 30:16

Therefore all they that devour thee shall be devoured; and all thine adversaries, every one of them, shall go into captivity; and they that spoil thee shall be a spoil, and all that prey upon thee will I give for a prey.

Jeremiah 30:20

Their children also shall be as aforesaid, and their congregation shall be established before me, **and I will punish all that oppress them.**

Jeremiah 50:4-7

In those days, and in that time, saith the LORD, the children of Israel* shall come, they and the children of Judah together, going and weeping: they shall go, and seek the LORD their God. They shall ask the way to Zion with their faces thitherward, *saying*, Come, and let us join ourselves to the LORD in a perpetual covenant that shall not be forgotten. My people hath been lost sheep: their shepherds have caused them to go astray, they have turned them away on the mountains: they have gone from mountain to hill, they have forgotten their restingplace. **All that found them have devoured them: and their adversaries said, We offend not, because they have sinned against the LORD,** the habitation of justice, even the LORD, the hope of their fathers.

*Israel here refers to the northern kingdom (the ten tribes); Judah refers to the southern kingdom (two tribes).

Jeremiah 50:10-11

And Chaldea **shall be a spoil:** all that spoil her shall be satisfied, saith the LORD. **Because ye were glad, because ye rejoiced, O ye destroyers of ****mine heritage,**** because ye are grown fat as the heifer at grass, and bellow as bulls.

****Deut. 32:9** For the LORD's portion is his people; *Jacob is the lot of his inheritance.*

3BI EPHESIANS: THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER
MINIBOOK: JUDGMENT OF THE NATIONS FOR HOW THEY TREAT ISRAEL

Joel 3:1-2

For, behold, in those days, and in that time, when I shall bring again the captivity of Judah and Jerusalem, I will also gather all nations, and will bring them down into the valley of Jehoshaphat, and will plead with them there for my people and for my heritage Israel, whom they have scattered among the nations, and parted my land.

Joel 3:1-2 AMPC

FOR BEHOLD, in those days and at that time when I shall reverse the captivity and restore the fortunes of Judah and Jerusalem, I will gather all nations and will bring them down into the Valley of Jehoshaphat, and there will I deal with and execute judgment upon them for [their treatment of] My people and of My heritage Israel, whom they have scattered among the nations and [because] they have divided My land.

Brim Note

Judgments are pronounced against various nations because of their treatment of Israel. See Ezekiel 25, for instance, noting verses 6 and 7, 10, 12, 14,15. Ezekiel 28:24-26 is inclusive of all around them who despised them.

Ezekiel 28:24-26

And there shall be no more a pricking brier unto the house of Israel, nor *any* grieving thorn **of all that are round about them, that despised them;** and they shall know that I *am* the Lord GOD. Thus saith the Lord GOD; When I shall have gathered the house of Israel from the people among whom they are scattered, and shall be sanctified in them in the sight of the heathen, then shall they dwell in their land that I have given to my servant Jacob. And they shall dwell safely therein, and shall build houses, and plant vineyards; yea, they shall dwell with confidence, **when I have executed judgments upon all those that despise them round about them;** and they shall know that I *am* the LORD their God.

Brim Note

For an in-depth study of Zechariah and its place in prophecy of the end of days, see David Baron's excellent commentary, Zechariah: A Commentary on His Visions and Prophecies, as mentioned earlier.

Zechariah 1:15

And **I am very sore displeased with the heathen** *that are* at ease: for I was but a little displeased, and they helped forward the affliction.

Zechariah 2:8-9

For thus saith the LORD of hosts; After the glory hath he sent me unto **the nations** which spoiled you: **for he that toucheth you toucheth the apple of his eye.** For, behold, I will shake mine hand upon them, and they shall be a spoil to their servants: and ye shall know that the LORD of hosts hath sent me.

3BI EPHESIANS: THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER
MINIBOOK: JUDGMENT OF THE NATIONS FOR HOW THEY TREAT ISRAEL

Zechariah 12:3

And in that day will I make Jerusalem a burdensome stone for all people: all that burden themselves with it shall be cut in pieces, though all the people of the earth be gathered together against it.

Zechariah 14:2-3

For I will gather all nations against Jerusalem to battle; and the city shall be taken, and the houses rifled, and the women ravished; and half of the city shall go forth into captivity, and the residue of the people shall not be cut off from the city.

Then shall the LORD go forth, and fight against those nations, as when he fought in the day of battle.

Zechariah 14:12

And this shall be the plague wherewith the LORD will smite all the people that have fought against Jerusalem; Their flesh shall consume away while they stand upon their feet, and their eyes shall consume away in their holes, and their tongue shall consume away in their mouth.

JESUS AND THE JUDGMENT OF THE NATIONS AT THE END OF THE TRIBULATION PERIOD

Brim Note

Following the Marriage Supper of the Lamb, the Master leaves to go to earth and fight against those nations. Led by the Antichrist, they will make one last attempt to destroy Israel.

Zechariah 14:3-4

Then shall the LORD go forth, **and fight against those nations, as when he fought in the day of battle.** And his feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem on the east, and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, and *there shall be* a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south.

Brim Note

Then comes the judgment of the nations. This is when the Son of man comes in His glory. It is the nations, not the Jews and not the Church, that are before Him for judgment. These are the nations who were on earth during the tribulation. There is no mention of a resurrection of the dead here. This is a works judgment based

3BI EPHESIANS: THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER MINIBOOK: JUDGMENT OF THE NATIONS FOR HOW THEY TREAT ISRAEL

on how they treated “His brethren,” the Jews. Micah 5:2, 3, shown at the end of the Matthew portion below, calls Israel “His brethren.”

Matthew 25:31-46

When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: For I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, and fed *thee*? or thirsty, and gave *thee* drink? When saw we thee a stranger, and took *thee* in? or naked, and clothed *thee*? Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me. Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: For I was an hungered, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did *it* not to one of the least of these, ye did *it* not to me. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

Micah 5:2-3

But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, *though* thou be little among the thousands of Judah, *yet* out of thee shall he come forth unto me *that is* to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth *have been* from of old, from everlasting. Therefore will he give them up, until the time that she which travaileth hath brought forth: then the remnant of **his brethren** shall return unto the children of Israel.

JUDGMENT OF THE EARTH

Isaiah 24 prophesies of the judgment of the earth. Verse 5 gives three reasons why earth and *the haughty people of the earth* meet judgments as spoken of in the Book of Revelation.

3BI EPHESIANS: THE GLORIOUS CHURCH & THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER
MINIBOOK: JUDGMENT OF THE NATIONS FOR HOW THEY TREAT ISRAEL

Isaiah 24:4-6 ASV

The earth mourneth *and* fadeth away, the world languisheth *and* fadeth away, the lofty people of the earth do languish. The earth also is *polluted* under the inhabitants thereof; [1] because they have transgressed the laws, [2] violated the statutes, [3] **broken the everlasting covenant**. Therefore hath the curse devoured the earth, and they that dwell therein are found guilty.

The Bible defines “the everlasting covenant.”

Psalms 105:8-11 ASV

He hath remembered his covenant for ever,
The word *which* he commanded to a thousand generations,
The covenant which he made with Abraham,
And his oath unto Isaac,
And confirmed the same unto Jacob for a statute,
To Israel for an everlasting covenant,
Saying, Unto thee will I give the land of Canaan,
The lot of your inheritance.

1 Chronicles 16:14-18 ASV

He is Jehovah our God;
His judgments are in all the earth.
Remember his covenant for ever,
The word which he commanded to a thousand generations,
The covenant which he made with Abraham,
And his oath unto Isaac,
And confirmed the same unto Jacob for a statute,
To Israel for an everlasting covenant,
Saying, Unto thee will I give the land of Canaan,
The lot of your inheritance.

[RETURN TO SUPPLEMENT LIST](#)